Rich his Farewell

to Militarie profession:

Conteining very pleasant matter for a peaceable time.

Gathered together for the onely delight of the courteous Gentlewomen both of England and Ireland, by whose onely pleasure they were collected together, and unto whom they are devoted and consecrate.

Newly augmented.

By *Barnabe Riche* Gentleman.

Malo me diuitem esse quam videri.

Imprinted at London by *E. A.* for *Thomas Adams*.

1606.

Contents

1 Jepho Duke of Mantona
2 Apolonius an Silla
3 Nicander & Lucilla
4 Fineo & Fiamma
5 Two brethren & their wives
6 Gonsales & his wife Agatha
7 Aramathus born a Leper
8 Phylotus & Emelia

¶ To the right curteous Gentlewomen, both of England and Ireland, Barnabe Rich wiſheth all things they ſhould haue appertaining to their honour, eſtimation, and all other their honeſt delights.

Gentlewomen (I am ſure there are many) but eſpecially of ſuch as beſt know mee) that will not a litle wonder to ſee ſuch alteration in me, that hauing ſpent my younger dayes in the Warres amongeſt men, and vowed my ſelfe only vnto Mars ſhould now in my riper yeares, deſire to liue in peace amongſt women, and to conſecrate my ſelfe wholy vnto Venus. But yet the wiſer ſort can very wel conſider, that the older we waxe, the riper our wit, and the longer we liue, the better we can conceiue of things appertaining to our owne profits, though harebraind youth ouerhaled me for a time that I knew not hale from bliſſe. Yet wiſedome nowe hath warned me, that I well knowe Cheeſe from Chalke, I ſee now it is leſſe painful to follow a Fiddle in a Gentlewomans chamber: then to march after a Drumme in the Field. And more ſound ſleeping vnder a ſilken Canopy cloſe by a friend, then vnder a Buſh in the field, within a mile of our foe. And nothing ſo dangerous to be wounded with the luring looke of our beloued Miſtreſſe: as with the cruel ſhot of our hatefull enemy, the one poſſeſt with a pitifull heart, to helpe where ſhe hath hurt: the other with a deadly hate, to kil where they might ſaue.

Experience now hath taught me, that to be of Mars his crew, there is nothing but paine, trauel, turmoile, diſquiet, cold, hunger, thirſt, penurie, bad lodging, worſe fare, vnquiet ſleepe, with a number of other calamities, that haps I know not how. And when a Souldier hath thus ſerued in many a bloody broile, a flap with a Foxe taile ſhall be his beſt reward: for I ſee no better recompence that any of them can get.

Now, contrary to be of Venus band, there is pleaſure, ſport, ioy, ſolace, mirth, peace, quiet, reſt, dainty fare, with a thouſand other delites, ſuch as I cannot rehearſe. And a man hauing ſerued but a reaſonable time may ſometimes take a taſte at his Miſtreſſe lippes, for his better recompence.

But now (Gentlewomen) as I haue vowed my selfe to be at your dispositions, so I know not how to frame my selfe to your contentations, when I consider with how many commendable qualities, he ought to bee indued, that should be welcommed into your blessed companies: I find in my selfe no one manner of exercise, that might giue mee the least hope to win your good likings.

As first for Dauncing, although I like the Measures very well, yet I could neuer tread them aright, nor to vse measure in any thing that I went about, although I desire to performe all things by line and by leuell, whatsoeuer I tooke in hand.

Our Galliards are so curious, that they are not for my dauncing, for they are so full of trickes and turnes, that he which hath no more but the plaine Sinquepace, is no better accounted of then a very bungler, and for my part, they might as soone teach me to make a Capricornus as a Capre in the right kind that it should be.

For a leig my heeles are too heauy: And these braules are so busie, that I loue not to beate my braines about them.

A Round is too giddy a dounce for my diet, for let the dauncers run about with as much speede as they may: yet they are neuer a whit the nearer to the ende of their course, vnlesse with often turnings, they hap to catch a fal. And so they end the dounce with shame, that was begun but in sport.

These Hornpipes I haue hated from my very youth: and I know there are many other that loues them as euil as I.

Thus you may perceiue that there is no dounce but either I like not of them or they like not of me, so that I can dounce neither.

There resteth then if I could play of any Instrument, or that I had any sight at Song, whereby I might delight your dainty eares, (Gentlewomen) by sweet playing or fayning some prety Ditties. But to the first, my fingers would neuer be brought in frame: for the second, my mouth is so vnpleasant, either to sing, or to faine, as would rather breed your loathing, then your liking.

Why yet if I could discourse pleasantly, to driue away the time, with amorous deuises, or that my conceit would serue me: either to propone prety questions, or to giue ready answers; with a number of other delightes, too long to be rehearsed, there were some comfort, that I might be allowed of amongst you. But my capacitie is so grosse, my witts be so blunt, & al my other sences are so dull: that I am sure you would sooner condemne me for a Dounce, then confirme me for a Disciple, fit to whisper a tale in a Gentlewomans eare.

But yet I trust (Gentlewomen) when you shall perceiue the zeale that I beare to my new profession: although you will not presently admit me to the Pulpet, yet you will not deny me to bee one of your Parish. Where if it please you, but to place me in the body of the Church, you shall finde my deuotion as much, as he that kneeleth next the Chauncell doore.

And heere (Gentlewomen) the better to manifest the farther regard of my duety: I haue presented you with a few rough heauen Histories. Yet I dare vndertake so warily polished, that there is nothing let slip, that might breed offence to your modest mindes.

I haue made bolde to publish them vnder your safe condites, & I trust it shall nothing at all offend you. My last request is, that at your pleasures you will peruse them, and with your fauours you will defend them, which if I may perceiue, not to be misliked of amongst you, my encouragement will bee such, that I trust within a very short space, you shal see me grow from a yong Pupie, to a sufficient Scholler. And thus (Gentlewomen) wishing to you all, what your selues do best like of,

I humbly take my leaue.

Yours in the way of honestie,
BARNABE RICH.

To the noble Souldiours both of England and Ireland: Barnabe Rich wisheth as to himselfe.

HEre is an olde Prouerbe (noble Souldiours) and thus it followeth: It is better to bee happie then wise: but what it is to bee happie, howe shoulde I discipher, who neuer in my life, could yet attaine to any hap at al that was good, and yet I haue had Souldiours lucke, and sped as well as the rest of my profession. And with Wisedome I will not meddle, I neuer knew where it grew, but this I dare boldly affirme (and the experience of the present time doth make daily proofe) that Wit standes by in a threedbare cote, where Follie sometimes sits in a veluet gowne: And how often is it seene, that Vice shall be aduanced, where Vertue is little or naught at all regarded, small desert shall highlie bee preferred, where well doing shall goe vnrewarded, and flatterie shall bee welcomed for a guest of great acount, where plaine Tom tell troth shall be thrust out of doores by the shoulders: And to speake a plaine truth indeede, do yee not see Pipers, Parasites, Fidlers, Dauncers, Players, Iesters, and such others, better esteemed and made of, and greater beneuolence vsed towardes them, then to any others that indeauour themselues to the most commendable qualities.

Then, seeing the abuse of this present age is such, that follies are better esteemed then matters of greater weight: I haue stept on to the Stage amongest the rest, contented to play a part, and haue gathered together this small volume of Histories, all treating (sir reuerence of you) of Loue.

I remember that in my last Booke, intituled: The Alarum to England, I promised to take in hand some other thing: but beleeue me, it was not this that I meant: for I pretended then to haue followed on, and where I ended with the decay of Martiall discipline, so I meant to haue begun againe with the discipline of Warre, and withall to haue set foorth the orders of sundry Battelles, and the maner of Skirmiges, with many plots of fortification, but especially those of the Low Countries, as Deft, Delfts Hauen, Roterodame Leiden, the Breille, both the head and the town Gorcoum, Gouldsluce, Maaslandesluce, the Crimpe, with diuers others worthie the perusing, for such as haue not seene them. But I see the time serues not for any such thing, to be accompted of. And therefore to fit the time better, I haue put foorth these louing Histories, the which I did write in Ireland, at a vacant time, before the comming ouer of Iames Fitz Morice† and it pleased me the better to doe it, onely to keepe my selfe from idlenesse, and yet they

† He was killed in 1579.

they ſay, it were better to be idle then ill occupied. But I truſt I ſhall pleaſe Gentlewomen, and that is all the gaine that I looke for. And here in I doe but follow the courſe of the world. For many new adaies goe about, by as great deuiſe as may be, how they might become women themſelues. Howe many Gentlemen ſhall you ſee at this preſent day, that I dare vndertake, in the wearing of their apparell, in the ſetting of their Ruffes, and the freeſling of their haire, are more new fangled and fooliſh then any curtiſan of Venice.

And I beſeech you (Gentlemen) giue me leaue to tell you a tale that comes euen now into my minde: the matter is not woorth the hearing, but yet verie ſtrange to me at the firſt.

It was my fortune at my laſt being at London, to walke thorowe the Strand towards Weſtminſter, where I met one came riding towards me on a Footecloth nagge, apparelled in a French Ruffe, a French Cloake, a French Hoſe, and in his hand a great fanne of Feathers, bearing them vp (verie womanly) againſt the ſide of his face: and for that I had neuer ſeene any man weare them before that day, I began to thinke it vnpoſſible, that there might a man be found ſo fooliſh, as to make himſelfe a ſcorne to the world, to weare ſo womaniſh a toy. But rather thought it had bin ſome ſhameleſſe woman, that had diſguiſed her ſelfe like a man in our Hoſe, and our Cloakes: for our Dublets, Gownes, Caps & Hats they had got long agoe.

But by this time he was come ſomething neare me, and I might ſee he had a Beard, whereby I was aſſured that he ſhould haue bin a man, whereat I began to muſe with my ſelfe, whether his ſimplicitie were more to be pitied, or his follie more to be laughed at. For in mine opinion, it is as fond a ſight to ſee a man with ſuch a bable in his hand, as to ſee a woman ride through the ſtreete with a launce in hers.

And as he paſſed by me, I ſawe three following that were his men, and taking the hindermoſt by the arme, I asked him what Gentlewoman his Maiſter was: but the fellow not vnderſtanding my meaning, told me his Maiſters name, and ſo departed.

I began then to muſe with my ſelfe, to what end that fanne of Feathers ſerued for, it could not be to defend the ſunne from the burning of his beautie, for it was in the beginning of Februarie, when the heate of the ſunne may be verie well indured.

Now, if it were to defend the winde, or the coldneſſe of the aire, me thinkes a French hoode had bin a great deale better, for that had bin both Gentlewomanlike, and being cloſe pinned downe about his eares, would haue kept his head a great deale warmer: and then a French hoode on his head, a French Ruffe about his necke, a French Cloake on his backe, and a paire of French Hoſe on his legs had bin right, *A la mode de France*: and this had bin ſomething ſutable to his wit.

But I thinke he did it rather to pleaſe Gentlewomen, and the better to ſhew what honour he bare them, would weare one of the greateſt vanities that belong to their ſexe. And to this end (Gentlemen) I haue tolde you my tale, that you might perceiue the ſundrie meanes we vſe, and all to pleaſe women. I ſee it is the path that all deſire to paſſe, and ſure I would wiſh my friends to tread the ſame trace. For what is he that is wiſe, which deſires to be a Souldiour: Mars his

Court

Courtis full of bale, Venus is full of blisse. And my [illegible] opinions and fellow Souldiours, if you will followe mine aduise, lay aside your weapons, hang vp your Armors by the walles, and learne an other while (for your better aduancements) to Pipe, to Fiddle, to Sing, to Daunce, to lie, to forge, to flatter, to carie tales, to set naile, or to do anie thing that your appetites best serue vnto, and that is better fitting for the time. This is the onely meane that is best for a man to bring himselfe in credite: Otherwise I know not which way a man might bend himselfe, either to get gaine or good report.

For first the Militarie profession, by meanes whereof men were aduanced to the greatest renowme, is now become of so slender estimation, that there is no account made neither of it, nor any that shall profesle it.

To become a Courtier, there is as little gaines to be gotten for Liberalitie, who was wont to be a principall Officer, aswell in the Court as in the Countrie, by whose meanes well-doing could neuer goe vnrewarded, is turned lacke out of office, and others appointed to haue the custodie of him to hold him short, that he range no more abroad, so that no man can speake with him. And they say, the poore Gentleman, is so fleeced from time to time, by those that be his keepers, that he hath nothing to giue that is good but it falleth to their shares.

To become a Student in the Lawe, there are such a number of them alreadie, that me thinkes it is not possible, that one of them should honestly thriue by an other. And some will say, that one Lawier, and one Goshauke, were enough in one shire. But of my conscience, there are more Lawiers in some one shire in England, with Attornies, Solicitours, or as they are termed, brokers of causes, or Petie foggers, then there are Goshaukes in all Norway.

To become a Marchant, traffique is so dead, by meanes of these forraine broiles, that vnlesse a man would be a theefe to his Countrie, to steale out prohibited wares, there were small gaines to be gotten.

To become a Farmer, landes be so racked at such a rate, that a man should but toile all the daies of his life to pay his landlords rent.

But what occupation or handie-craft might a man then follow to make himselfe rich: when euerie Science depends vpon new fangled fashions. For he that to day is accounted for the finest workman, within one moneth some new found fellow commeth out with some new found fashion, and then he beares the prise, and the first accounted for a bungler. And within an other moneth after, the second shall be serued with the same sawce: and thus there is no Artificer that can hould his credite long.

Such is the miserable condition of this our present time, this is the course of the world, but especially here in England. Where there is no man thought to be wise, but he that is wealthie: where no man is thought to speake the truth, but such as can lie, flatter and dissemble: where there is no aduise allowed for good, but such as tendeth more for gaine then for glorie. And what pinching for a penie, that should be spent in our Countries defence? How prodigall for a pound to be spent vpon vanities and idle deuices? What small recompence to Souldiours, that fight with foes for their Countries quiet? How liberall to Lawiers, that set friends at defiance, and disquiet a whole common wealth? what fawning vpon him whome Fortune doth aduance? What frowning on him whome shee

hath

hath brought losse? what little care of the poore, and such as be in want? what feasting of the rich, and such as be wealthy? What sumptuous houses built by men of meane estate? What little hospitality kept from high and low degree.

And here I cannot but speake of the bounty of that noble gentleman Sir *Christopher Hatton*, my very good Maister and vpholder: who hauing builded a house in Northampton shire, called by the name of Holdenby. Which house for the brauery of the buildings, for the statelinesse of the chambers, for the rich furniture of the lodgings, for the conueyance of the offices, and for all other necessaries appertenent to a Pallace of pleasure, Is thought by those that haue iudgement, to be incomparable, and to haue no fellowe in England, that is out of her Maiesties hands, and although this house is not yet fully finished, and is but a newe erection, yet it differeth farre from the workes that are vsed now a dayes in many places. I meane where the houses are built with a great nũber of chimnies, and yet the smoke comes forth but at one only tunnel. This house is not built on that manner, for as it hath sundry Chimnies, so they cast forth seuerall smoakes: and such worthy port and daily hospitality kept, that although the owner himselfe vseth not to come there once in two yeares, yet I dare vndertake, there is daily prouision to be found conuenient, to intertaine any noble man with his whole traine, that should hap to call in of a sodaine. And how many gentlemen and strangers, that comes but to see the house are there dayly welcommed, feasted, and well lodged? From whence he should come, be he rich, be he poore, that should not there be entertained, if it please him to call in. To bee short, Holdenby gueth daily reliefe to such as be in want, for the space of sixe or seauen miles compasse.

Peraduenture those that be enuious, will thinke this tale nothing appertinent to the matter, that I was in hand with all, but I trust my offence is the lesse, considering I haue spoken but a truth: and do wish that euery other man were able to say asmuch for his maister, and so an end.

And now where I left off, I was telling, what Pride, what Couetousnes, what Whordome, what glotony, what blasphemy, what Riot, what excesse, what Dronkennes what Swearing, what Bribery, what Extorcion, what Vsury, what, oppression, what deceipt, what Forgery, what vice in generall, is dayly entertained, and practised in England. And although it hath pleased GOD by wondefull signes and miracles, to forewarne vs of his wrath, and call vs to repentance, yet you see the world runneth forewards, and keepeth his wonted course, without any remorse of conscience, neither making signe, nor proffer to amend.

But like as we see an old sore beeing once ouer run, will not be cured with any moderate medicine, but must be eaten with corosiues till it comes to the quicke: and like as we say, one poison must be a meane, to expell an other. So what should we otherwise thinke of our selues, but if wee be growne to such extremity, as no gentle admonition will serue to reclaime vs: what other thing should we looke for, but a mischiefe to be the medicine: God will not suffer that vice shall alwaies florish, he will surely roote it out at the last. And how long hath he already borne with vs in our wickednesse? And what reformation is there had amongst vs? valesse it be to goe from euill to worse

But if we did duely consider, how mercifully he hath still dealt with vs, how fauourably he hath preserued vs: & how wonderfully he hath defended vs: I think we should not be (altogether) so vnthankefull as we shew our selues to be. For who knoweth not what an eye sore, this little Ile of England hath beene to the whole world, & how long haue we liued (as it were) in contempt of such countries as be our next neighbours, who still enuieing our quiet and happy gouernment: haue practised by as many deuises as they could, to bring vs into their owne predicament, had it not bin the onely prouidence of God that preserued vs. Or what friendship might we yet hope to finde at any of their hands: if their opportunity would serue them to be reuenged of the despight, which long agoe they had conceiued against vs. First the French hath euer bin our enemies by Nature. The Spaniards for Religion. The Dutch although we haue stood them in some great stead, and holpe them at many a pinch yet I could buy as much friendship as they doe allowe vs, for a barrell of English beere. If we should go any further, then we come to the Pope, the Turke, and the Deuill, & what friendship they beare vs, I thinke euery one can imagine.

And here we might consider how wonderfully God hath wrought on our behalfes, and with all humblenesse of heart, giue him daily thanks, for his benefits bestowed vpon vs, but most of all, and especially, for our most gracious and Soueraigne Lady Queene Elizabeth: who from time to time he hath so mightily preserued, to be the very instrument of his mercy and louing kindnesse towards vs: and for, whose sake (no doubt) he hath forborne vs in his heauy displeasure, as many times he did the children of Israell, at the request of his seruant Moyses.

First how was she assaulted in her sisters time, by those rauening wolues, that daily sought her death: for they al stood in doubt, that she should be that Iudith which should cut of proud *Holophernes* his head. And it pleased God to bring it euen so to passe. not only defending her from their cruelty and rage, but raised her vp (indeede) to the vtter subuersion of those bloudy Buchers, and to the great comfort of vs all, that were in bondage, and subiect to tyranny.

Not only setting vs free, from those detestable enormities, that so corosated our consciences, but made open way and passage for the word of God, freely to be published (I thinke) to our owne destruction, that so vnworthily receiue it. Vpon this, how many mighty enimies protested against her, and what harme haue any of them bin able to do her. And how many treasons and priuy conspiracies (sith that time) hath bin practised by our pelting Papists against her. But God hath reuealed them and brought to light.

Let vs therefore pray vnto God, that he would so lengthen her daies, that we might still inioy so gracious a Princes, long to gouerne and raigne ouer vs. And that from time to time, he would so direct her Noble Counsel, in all their meetings and consultations, as may redounde to his glorye, to the benefit of their Countrye, and to their immortall fame.

Let vs likewise pray, that God would roote such couetous hearts out of England, that for the sparing of a penie for the present time: care not to let slippe such matter, as may cost many a pound here after this.

Now lastly, & as Mariners vse to syng at the Sea, God saue my Mate & me also.

And

And God send all Souldiours that haue honestly serued their Country, better consideration then of long time they haue had.

And thus noble Souldiours and Gentlemen all, I haue held you with a long Sermon, neither can I tell how my preaching will be allowed of: I craue no more, but wish you all better Fortune then I know the present will afford you, and so will rest at your disposition,

Barnabe Rich.

¶ To the Readers in generall.

I Assure thee (gentle reader) when I first tooke in hande to write these discourses, I meant nothing lesse then to put them in print, but writ to them at the request of some of my dearest friendes, sometimes for their disporte, to serue their priuate vse. And now againe by great importunity, I am forced to send them all to the Printer. The Hystories (altogether) are eight in number, whereof, the first, the second, the fift, the seuenth and eight, are tales that are but forged onely for delight, neither credible to be beleeued, nor hurtfull to be perused. The third, the fourth, and the sixt: are Italian Hystories, written likewise for pleasure by maister L. B. And here gentill reader, I must instantly intreate thee, that if thou findest any words or tearms, seeming more vndecent, then peraduenture thou wilt like of: thinke that I haue set them downe, as more appropriat to expresse the matter they intreate of, then either for want of iudgement or good maners. Trusting that as I haue written them in Jest, so thou wilt read them but to make thy selfe merie. I wishe they might as well please thee in the reading, as they displease me in putting them forth. I bid thee hartily farewell.

Barnabe Richy.

Probably Ludwich Bryskett

W. I. Gentleman in praise of the Author.

WHo seekes by Ladie fame to reape renowne,
Must aske consent of worthy vertues grace;
To her belongs the staulement of the Crowne,
She yeeldes all those their iust deserued place.
As tread her path and runne her royall race:
Such Rich rewards to each, she yeeldes each where
As might become this worthy Rich to weare,

The painefull man that tilles his ground, reapes fruit,
Each merith ath his meede, paine hath his hire:
Desert requires that fame should not stand mute,
Where wisedome doth to vertues waies aspire.
The hope of gaine doth set mens hearts an fire,
Then yeeld him thankes, that erst hath vndertooke,
For thy delight to penne this little booke.

Let *Momus* mates chat on, in their dispight,
Let wranglers wreake and wrest the worst they may:
The wisest sort will iudge and take delight,
Though iangling iayes that know not what they say:
Will oftentimes their witlesse wittes bewray,
Yet Rich shall reape, what he by right hath wonne,
Deserued praise for that which here is done.

Finis. quoth W. I. Gent.

B. Baptiſte Starre in praiſe of the Author.

IF due deſert ſhould reape reward,
Or worthy merit, guerdon haue:
Why ſhould not Rich preſſe forth himſelfe,
The louely lawrell crowne to craue:
Whoſe life in field that won him praiſe,
He leades at home in Pallas waies.

Scorne not then Zoylus his good happe,
That can his will ſubdue and tame:
But trie to tread his path whereby,
Thou maiſt thy life with vertue frame:
Allowe his paine, and pen to write,
Who nought pretends but thy delight.

Loe he who wonted was in field,
To meete his furious foe in face:
Hath ſcald parnaſſus hill where he,
Attends Minerus her noble grace.
And there his penne doth plaie his part,
As did els where his ſhield and darte.

Finis, quoth B.S.

The Printer to the Reader.

THE fragrant Roſe can make no choyſe,
Who ſhall vpon him light:
The ſprauling Spider turnes to ganle,
The Bee to honey right.

So fares it with this booke, whoſe leaues
Are open ſpred to thee:
Make choiſe good Reader of the beſt,
Sucke honey with the Bee.

Miſconſter not each merrie phraſe,
Deeme not the worſt of it:
Which is not pend to doe thee hurte,
But recreate thy wit.

And for ſuch faultes as ſcaped haue
The preſſe, whereof thers ſtore:
Reproue the Printer for his haſte,
Blame not the booke therefore.

But as by mirth tis meant to moue,
Thy minde to ſome delight:
Reward his paine with praiſe, which did
Theſe pleaſaunt Stories wright.

FINIS.

The

Sappho Duke of Mantona.

The argument of the first Historie.

¶Sappho, *Duke of* Mantona *having long time serued* Claudius *the Emperour, by whose magnanimitie, and Martiall prowesse, sundrie victories were atchiued against the Turke, was by false imposition banished, himselfe,* Messilina *his wife,* Aurelianus *his sonne, with* Phylene *his daughter, in which banishement they sustained sundry conflictes of Fortune, but in the end, restored againe to their former estate and dignitie.*

THe one of the greatest vertues that worldly men can expresse in the common behauiour of this life, is neither to waxe proud by prosperitie, nor to fall into dispaire by aduersitie, for Fortune hauing a free will to come and goe, when, and where shee listeth, the wise man ought not to bee sorie when hee looseth her, nor to reioyce, when hee holdeth her, for that the valiant man looseth no reputation, when that Fortune faileth him, but is the lesse esteemed of, if hee want discretion to beare her mutabilities, the which for the most part is altogether vncertaine, now promising good, now performing ill, nowe lifting vp to the tip of the highest dignitie, now throwing downe to the pit of perpetuall infamie: nowe aduancing aloft those that bee vnworthie, nowe throwing downe the climmers vp into extreame aduersitie: such are the giftes and graces of Fortune, to haue no better thing more certaine in them, then to bee for the most part in all thinges vncertaine, as the sequell of this Historie shall more better describe, and followeth in this manner.

There was sometimes remaining in the Courte of the Emperor Claudius, a noble Duke whose name was Sappho Duke of Mantona, who as well, through his own magnanimitie and valiaunce, as otherwise through his great policie and experience in Martiall affaires,

affaires, had atchiued many notable victories, in the behalfe of the Emper our against the Turke, which made him both famous to the world, and feared of his enemies, but most entirely beloued of the Emperour Claudius: But the warres being once finished & brought to an end, so that the Empire remained in tranquillity & peace: Souldiors were forgotten, Captaines were not cared for, such as had proffered themselues to fight for the safetie of their Country, were now shaken of, & such were preferred in their roomes, as had any facultie in them tending to pleasure and delight, as dauncers, Pipers, Fidlers, Minstriles, Singers, Parasites, Flatterers, Jesters Rimers, Talebearers, Newes carriers, loue makers, such as can deuise to please women, with new fangles, straunge fashions, by praising of their beauties, when sometimes it is scarce worthy, by commending of their manifold vertues, when God knowes they haue few or none at all. But ere I pray you how farre my wittes begin to square, I pretended but to penne certaine pleasaunt discourses, for the onely pleasure of gentlewomen, & euen at the very first entrie I am falne from a reasonable tale to a railyng rage, as it may séeme. But I pray you gentlewomen beare with my weakenesse, & as the Preacher in the Pulpit, when hee is out of his Text, will say for excuse: good people, though this be something digressyng from my matter, yet it may very well serue at this present: Take this I pray you for my excuse in like case.

And now to my purpose where I left of before, this noble Duke Sappho, had no skil in Courting treade: his head which had bin accustomed to beare the lofty helme, had now quite forgotten to weare the wauering Plumes, readie to blowe away with euery wind. His bodie most inured to weare a coate of steele, could not be brought in fashion with this queint & nice arate. His necke he thought more fitly to paise the trusty targe, then to be hanged with gemines or chains of Golde: his fingers commonly practised to graspe the Swoorde or Launce, could not bee brought in frame to strike the Virginall or Lute: His voice serued him better to cheare his Souldiers in the fielde, then either to faine or syng ditties in a Ladies Chamber. His tongue had more vsed to speake simplie and plaine, then to dissemble with his friend, or to flatter with his foe: His legges had better skill to march after dubbe a dubbe a dubbe, then to mince it with a Pinion, tracing a Pauion or

Gallyard

Calliarde vppon the Knyghes: what shoulde I saie further, this noble Duke had no maner of skill in Carpet trade: But thus it fell out that Parasits and Flatterers, hauyng once entered credite with the Emperour (as surely it is almost a common infirmity, aswell emongst Princes, as other superiour officers, to bée seduced by Flatterers, Pickthankes & Talebearers) this noble Emperour likewise, by the instigatiō of such as were about him, who perceiuing the duke to be none of their flatteryng fraternitie, and enuieghyng the greate reputation wherein the Emperour helde him, had so incensed the Emperour against him, that nowe his likyng was conuerted into loathyng, and his great loue tourned to a moze hate, that in the ende the poore Duke was brought to answere vnto many forged articles surmised against hym, who neither in consideration of his former seruice done for his Countrye, neither in respecte of the innocencie of his cause, could otherwise be dispensed withall, then to be banished into exile, him selfe, Mesilina his wife, Aurelianus his sonne, with Phylene his daughter: And although ỹ common sort of people helde him in greate honor, and much lamented his case, yet it could not be holpen, but the Emperours decrée openly pronounced, must néedes take place.

I beseche you gentlewomen, yet to comfort your selues, I knowe your gentill hartes, can not endure to heare of such vngentill partes, but these are but the frumpes of ordinarie Fortune, not priuate to Duke Sappho alone, but common to all men that bée of the like profession, for what happened better to the most noble Captaines of the worlde, or what other recompence receiued either Cæsar, Scipio, Haniball, or many other like, who hauing honoured their countries, with sondrie triumphes and many notable victories when the warres were ended, and that there was no more néede of them, finished their daies in such pitifull plight, as I will keepe to my selfe, bicause right courteous Gentlewomen, I rather desire to drawe you into delightes, then to drowne you in dumpes, by reuealyng of such vnnatural facts, as I knowe your gentle Natures is not able to digest.

Thus you haue heard how this noble Duke, with his wife and children, by sentence from the Emperour, were banished from out their native Countrey, as also from any other Realmes, Cities, townes, or territories, beyng within the Emperours Dominions. There resteth now for the Duke to make such poore prouision for his furnishyng, as his habilitie might any waies serue him, the which

God knoweth, fel out so meane and shamle, as it scarcely serueth him to defraie his charges, to carrie him from out those places, from whence he was prohibited: and taking his course towards the parties of Macedonia, after a long & wearie iourney, he arriued at a towne called Tariffa, where beyng lodged in a meane and simple house, his money now being at the last cast, wherewith to beare his charges, his poore wife & children altogether wearied, with their long & troblesome trauaile, & himselfe all ashamed to be knowne what he was. Now it fel out, that the Hoste of the house many times brwing, and casting his eyes vpon the Duchesse of Messilina, who notwithstanding she dissembled her estate and degree, contented to leaue her honourable dignitie, and to participate such equall fortune with her husband & children, as their hard haps had conducted them vnto, yet her beautie (which could not be blemished with meane and homely garments) had so entangled her arrant Hoste, that he could not be merrie when he was out of her sweet sight, and now though he perceiued his ghest began to ware slack in paiment, and not able to disburse for his ordinary expences, yet for the loue he bare to his wife, he was contented to chalke vp the charges behind the doore, hopyng in the end to haue cleared the scores to his better content, and as time and conuenience might serue him, he spared not to let the Duchesse vnderstand his great liking towards her, assuring her that the courtesie that he vsed towards her husband, was onely for her sake, and that if he were assured his good will might be acceptable in her sight, she might assure her selfe of such a friend of him, as would be as carefull of her as her husband, to whom she was married.

This Lady now hauing wel pondered the words of her amorous Hoste, who would not thinke but that she was much perplexed in her minde, that she who had bin borne of honourable Parentage espoused to a noble Duke, whose dignitie in times past, surmounted all the rest, whose training vp had euer bin amongst those of the highest degree, & now that her honourable estate, was not onely eclipsed by crooked Destinie, but also to haue her Chastitie assailed, by such a simple coistrell, whom she durst not so sharply shake of, as her heart would very wel haue serued, for that she knew the duke her husband was run in his debt, neither could she tell by what meanes he was able to discharge it, she was therefore constrained with faire speeches, to shift him of from time to time, the which the knaue perceiuing very well, began to thinke with him selfe, that it was but her husbands presence, that hindred him of his purpose, and therefore re-

turned

termined to finde a present remedie.

And now comming to his guest, began to reckon with him, and to call him to accompt for charges wherein he was behinde, telling him that at that very instante, he had occasion to occupie money, which made him not onely to seeke vp such small summes as were due vnto him, but also to trie his friendes otherwise to serue his tourne: that helping him now at his present need, he might then begin againe a new score, & would beare with him a much longer time.

The poore Duke then inforced to seeke out an olde Salue for a newe Sore, which is to pray when he was not able to pay, with verie courteous speeches, desired his Hoste to beare with his inabilitie, assuring him that when time should serue, he would so throughlie recompence him, as he should haue cause to holde him wel contented.

But what praiers may prevaile, where pitie is cleane exiled, or what gentlenesse is to be looked for, to come from such an vngentle chorle, whose minde was onely set vpon Rape and Rapine, who had premeditated before the drifte (which as he presupposed) was now sorted out as he looked for.

Wherefore (as it were) halfe in a furie, he vttered forth these wordes: My friende content your selfe, and take this for a resolute answere, the money which now resteth in your handes, although I might verie ill forbeare it as my case standeth, yet for that it is not mine vse, to run into any further charges, without a better assurance, then either wordes or promises, I am notwithstanding contented to beare with you for that which is alreadie past, minding from this date forwardes to giue no further credite, and for that you are altogether a stranger, vnto me vnknowne, both what you are, from whence you come, whether you will, and where I should finde you, I purpose therefore for my better securitie, and the rather to come by that you alreadie do owe me, to keepe your wife in pawne, whom I know is so dearely beloued vnto you, that for her sake I shall the sooner heare from you againe, otherwise I knowe not where to inquire after you nor how to come by that is my due, which I am not well able to forbeare, neither doe I minde clearely to lose.

The poore afflicted Duke, hauing neuer saine before into cutthroates handes, perswaded in deede that the tenour of this Varlettes wordes, and the keeping of his wife tended to no other ende, but for his better assurance to come by his money, was constrained to make a vertue of necessitie, and was so much the better pleased for that his wife might still remaine free from farther trauaile, & think-

pyng in time to settle him selfe, and to recouer his wife, and children about him: with this resolution he began to relate vnto his wife, with what salutations his gentle hoste had greeted him withall, desiryng her to comfort her selfe for a season, assuring to doe his best indeauour and to set vp his sayles to the prosperous gales of Fortune.

This good Ladie, heayryng her housbands discourse vncertaine what to doe, wepte bitterly, as well for griefe to loose his presence, as for that she should bée left in the house of the arrant knaue her Hoste, but like a wise Ladie heayryng the alleadged reasons of her Lord & housband, did thinke it not for the best, to encrease his old sorrowe with a new griefe, contented her selfe, vttering these wordes.

Deare housband, knowyng all that you haue said to be very iust and true, I am contented for a certaine time to forze my wil, in hope that hereafter we may liue togither, ioyng our selues in the companie of our children, and this I would desire you, that so often as you can by conuenient and trustie messengers, to send me word and intelligence of your health and estate, because the same should bryng greater contentation vnto me, then the welfare of myne owne selfe.

This said, she imbracyng him very louyngly, and he kissing her with great sorrowe and griefe, toke his leaue, and badde his Ladie and spouse heartely farewell, leauyng with her Phylene her deare daughter.

Thus himselfe with Aurelianus his little sonne, departed from Taryffa, towards the famous citie of Cayre, & as they passed through a Wildernesse, hauing lost their waie, wandering two or three daies without any manner of foode, saue Hippes, Hawes, and Sloes, such as they could gather in the desert, the poore child being ouercome with faintnesse not longer able to trauaile, beganne to complaine to his afflicted father, desiring him to sitte downe to rest himselfe a time, the woefull Father tormented in his minde, to see his poore distressed Child, satte him downe vnder a Tree, where after a while, recounting to himselfe his sondry misfortunes, being oppressed and wearied with trauaile, hée fell into a sounde sleape, the Chiloe after he had a while rested himselfe, leaning his Father asleepe, beganne to seeke about for somethyng to slake his hunger, and as he was straying thus about the woods, it fortuned the Duke of Vasconia, hauing lost his cõpany in ỹ pursute of a Stag, where he had béene a hunting, and as he was crossing the neere way to goe to the City of Messyna, where he held his Court, hauing in

companie but the Lord of Sura, with three or fower seruing men, he fortuned to espie the child running in the bushes al alone, and calling the child vnto him, he saide, alas my little boy, what makest thou in this place, art thou here alone, or howe camest thou hether I pray thee tell me. Forsouth Godfather (quoth the childe) I came hether with my Father, who lyes a sléepe hereby, and I was séeking something to eate, for by my troth I am so a hungered, that I could eate worse meate then a péece of a rosted Pigge, and that with all my heart.

The Duke greatly pleasuring to heare the prety aunswer of the Childe, replied in this wise: How saist thou my little knaue, wilt thou bée my boy and dwell with me, and I will giue thée good meate thy belly full, how saist thou wilt thou goe with me.

Yea forsoothe Godfather (quoth the Childe) on that condition you will giue mee roste meate enough, I will goe with you, for I thinke I did not eate my bellie full of roste meate, this moneth and more.

The Duke then commaunded one of his men to take vp the Child, whom he carried away with him, and nowe perceiuing it to bée both well fauoured, quicke witted, and very apt to learning, hée brought it vp at schoole, where he prooued not onely wise and learned, but also in many other exercises, conuenient and fit for Gentlemen, he commonly excelled euery other man, and thus leauing him at Schoole, I will conuert my tale to his woefull Father, who when he was awaked, and missed his prety sonne, began to prie about in euery bushe, seeking and calling, what Aurelianus, Aurelianus, where be you Aurelianus: But in the ende when he could no where finde him, thinking assuredly that hee had beene deuoured by some wilde beaste, beganne with pitifull exclamation to crie out. O Fortune, Fortune more then fickle, who in a moment hoiste a man vp to the highest degree, and by and by in lesse space then in the twinkling of an eie, she throweth him downe againe so lowe, as more miserie is prepared for him in one day, then shée aduanced him in an hundred yeres, which I nowe proue and haue experience in my selfe, and so much the more, the greater is my griefe, who haue bene nourished delicately amongst my friends, maintained still in most prosperous estate, hoping for the full perfection of my felicities, by marrying a noble Dame, with whom I pretended to spend the residue of my life, according to the scope and lotte appointed by the al-

mighty God but now beholde all my enterprises bee quite pluckt backe, and my purposes turned cleane topse torue, in such wise, that from honourable estate, I am driuen to wander like a vacabond, driuen from Post to Piller, from Country to Country, from Region, to Region, to sequestrate my selfe from amongst my friends, without any assured place where to make my aboade. Oh froward fate, how canst thou bee so hard hearted and voide of pitie, still to prosecute thy cruell pursute, first to depriue me of my honourable dignities, then to banish me from amongst my louing friends, thirdly to separate me from Messilina, my wellbeloued wife, more deare vnto mee then the balls of my vnhappy eyes, and not yet contented, but now to bereaue mee of my sweete infant, my onely hope of comfort in my olde age. O Death Death, the end of all sorrowes, and the beginner of felicities, now make sharpe thy Darte, and giue no longer delaye of life, dispatche, dispatch at once, the most infortunate man that liues this day on earth: for what auailes my life, if in the gulfe of sorrow & greefe I drounde the pleasures of the same: But ah I see right well, thou preseruest ẏ same of purpose, but to delight in my greeues, & to triumphe ouer my aduersities. And here withall the brinish teares so streamed downe his cheekes, that, he was not farther able to speake one woorde, but running vp and downe the woodes, sighyng and sobbyng in great anguishe of mynde, and his bodie much infeebled for want of foode and sustenaunce. He fortuned to meete certaine labouryng men, that dwelte in a poore Village not far from the place, who perceiuyng by his geasture, ẏ he was passionated in his thoughts, they began with such courteste, as they had learned in the Countrie, to demaunde the occasion of his griefe. But he knowing verie wel how farre they were vnable to minister releefe to the least of his afflictions, could render no other aunswere, then piteous sighes and sobbes: but the poore peasauntes, when they had better beheld the talnesse of his stature, the seemlines of his countenaunce, & the comelinesse of his personage, were greatlie mooued with compassion towards him, and with such hadde eloquence as their skill would permit, beganne to perswade him to walke with them to their Cabbins; where he might refresh himselfe, with such homely Junckettes, as was prouided for their owne suppers. The Duke cōtented to yeelde, to their requestes, walked along with them, where he remained all the night verie pensiue and heauie in his heart, and beganne to thinke with him selfe, that there

was

was no more hope left for [illegible]
beganne to imagine, how he might render some reliefe to his poore wife and daughter, whom he had left as you before haue heard.

Now there was dwelling harde by the place, a noble man that was Lord of the Village, who hauing intelligence of this distressed straungers, caused him to bee sente for, before whom when the Duke was presented, after many questions debated betweene them, the noble man demaunded of the Duke what Countrey man hee was, and how he had beene trained vp, and then, if he could bee contented to plaie the Seruing man, and would bee carefull and diligent in his maisters affaires, that then, we would bee contented to receiue him into his seruice, and would reward him accordingly, as he was able to deserue.

The Duke all ashamed to bee knowne what he was, reuerently made answer, that he was borne in the Country of Achaia: and that he had beene trained vp in seruice with sondrie noble men, and would bee very well contented to doe his best indeuour, to serue him with the best seruice he could doe.

Thus the poore Duke became a seruingman, whom we will leaue with his maister, and returne to his wife, who was left in Hoeffers handling (as you haue heard) remained in the house with this Varlet, who sought by sondry assaies to satisfie his villanous lust, and like an expert Souldier when he commeth to besiege a hold, first sendeth his Heraulds to summon the Fort, proferring many large conditions, if they will quietly surrender, but if defiance be made, then presently he placeth his battery, thundring forth his Canon shot against the walles, which if they be so wel Rampered, that there will no breach bee made, yet he ceaseth not with giftes and bribes to corrupt the Warders, not caring how he conquereth so he maie haue the spoyle.

This villaine in likewise, sought first with piteous sighes, which sauft with sugred wordes, did serue in steed of Heraulds, to perswade her to yelo vp the keyes of the fortresse, that with peaceable entry he might take possession at his pleasure: but being by her repulsed, and the Flagge of defiaunce displaied vpon the Bulworke, then with thounderyng threates hee thinketh to make his Batterie, proferryng to cast her into prison, for the debt which was owing him for her Husbande and her selfe. Other whiles

againe

[illegible] gaits, thinking that for the necessity she was driuen into, shee would haue made sale of that, which she preferred before her owne life.

This noble Dame, perceiuing her selfe so hardly beset on euery side, fearyng in the ende, the Varlet should worke her some greater despight, so enforced her selfe, with Phylene her litle daughter to fall to worke, that with weauyng and knittyng of laces, and otherwise whith their needles, they had gained so much money, as she was able to set her selfe free, from out a knaues debt. And thinking with her selfe, that her housbande had remained about the City of Cayre, to the which he purposed to iourney when he departed from her: she determined with all conuenient speede to repaire thether, as well to comforte her selfe with the companie of her Lord and housband, as otherwise with her yearnynges to helpe to releeue hym, but for that she had vnderstandyng that the passage by land, was not onely troublesome, but also very inconuenient for her to trauaile, by reason it lay through wooddes and deserts, she gate intelligence of a smal Barke that was bound thether by Sea, which onely stayed but for a winde to serue her turne: hereupon shee discharged her selfe from the towne of Taryffa, and when weather serued, agreeing with the Maister for her passage, her selfe with her daughter repaired aboard the Barke, which beeing put to Sea, was forced by the extremity of a contrary wind, to put themselues romer for the safety of their liues, to a cleane contrarie place. And where they ment to haue sailed to the Citty of Cayre, they were nowe ariued at the Citty of Cherona, where the Lady comming a shore, shee ioyed nothing so much in the narrowe escape shee had made with life, by reason of the tempest, as she sorrowed for beeing so farre driuen from her husband, whose fellowship she more desired, then eyther wealth or worldly treasure. But for asmuch as both her selfe and her daughter, were very euill at ease and greatly infeebled with sicknesse at the Sea, and bad lying in the Ship, shee determined to make her abode still at Cherona, till shee might conuaye letters to Taryffa, that should certifie her husband of all that had happened.

In the meane time, her husband hauing receiued some smal beneuolence of his Lord and Maister, who had conceiued some good lyking of him, by reasō of the skil that he had in riding of Horse, very desirous to render his wife some portion of his good fortunes, who had bin so long a time partaker of his euil haps, crauing leaue of his

Lord

Lord for a time, came to Taryssa, where when hee missed his wife, whose letters were not yet come from Cherona, and therefore could get no intelligence, but that shee was gone to Cayre, of purpose to seeke him: in a great perplexity he trauelled towards Cayre, where making great inquirie could learne nothing of her, from thence he posted from place to place, from Citty to Citty, from Towne to Towne, but seeing neuer the neare his purpose, he then began to double his dolours, with bitter words to curse the celestial Signes, & Planets, which raigned at the day of his Natiuity, and howre of his birth, contented to yeeld himselfe a captiue to mishap, and to surrender himselfe a subiect to Fortunes froward frumpes.

Seeing thus turmoiled with great anguish of mind, wandering too and fro, he was brought so lowe and bare, that he was ready to begge an almes from doore to doore, and comming to a poore country Village, his penury was such, that he was glad to become a seruant to him that was the Sexten of the Parish, whom he had not serued long, but the old Sexten his maister died and for that hée had nowe learned to ryng Belles, and had some cunning in the keeping of a Cloche: the Parishoners were contented to place him in his Maisters rome, the Duke thinking himselfe more then thrise happy to get so great preferment, thanked Ladie fortune that had so friendly dealt with him, resoluing himselfe to continue the office while hée liued, but Fortune finding him so thankefull for a little, dealt more friendly with him, as after you shall heare.

But I will first declare how it happened with his sonne Aurelianus, who was taken vp in the woodes by the Duke of Vasconya, as before you haue heard.

But here I must first remember you, that the Duke chaunged his name from Aurelianus to Siluanus, which name hé gaue him of purpose, for that he was found in the woodes.

Siluanus now hauing beene trayned vp at Schoole, was come to mans estate, and besides that he had the knowledge of good letters, hee was comely in his personage, and of very good proportion, and in all manner of activities appertaining to a Gentleman, hé exceeded every other that was in the Court, besides in his demeanours he was so courteous and gentle, that he gained the good will & lyking, both of one and other, but especially of the Duke himselfe, who allowed him such large expences, whereby to maintaine himselfe as braue as the best.

Now this noble Duke hauing no other children but one onely daughter, whose name was Valeria, in whom it seemed that both Vertue and Beautie had held some great contention, who should beare away the prise, for although that in beautie and good grace she exceeded euery other Dame, yet her vertues and good conditions surmounted more her beautie, then the finest golde surmounteth Lead or drosse.

The Ladie now hauing heard great report of the [illegible]enesse of Siluanus, who was suspected to be but some poore mans sonne, by reason he was found in the Woods, began yet to beare him very good countenance, which at the first proceeded but of the noble Nature, which euer was accustomed to be fauourable to such, in whom was found any worthy desert: but as the fish which by little and little sucketh vpon the baite, till at the length she swalloweth downe the hooke, whereby she hangeth fast, not able to free her selfe, so this Ladie Valeria, contemplating her selfe many times to behold that young Gentleman Siluanus, was so farre intangled with his sweete and pleasant countenance, that now perforce her will, she was constrained to yeeld to Loue, and feeling her selfe insnared, and bereaued of former freedome, being by her selfe alone, she began to complaine as followeth.

Alas (saith she) is it possible, that now force perforce my minde should be so altered, that straying from the bounds and limits of vowed Chastitie: I should now become amorous, and subiect to a certaine vnacquainted lust, from whence commeth this alteration? or how happeneth this vnaccustomed hewe? ah Loue Loue, how hast thou tormented me, and taken away the health and soundnesse of my minde, it behoueth me to shew my selfe, as issued forth of the noble house of Vasconia, and with the greater care I ought to take heed, how I degenerate from the noble bloud whereof I am descended, rather then to set my minde on a fondling vnknowne, vnto whom peraduenture if I discouer my fondnesse, will not let to mock me for my labour, and for all the beautie or noblenesse of my birthe, will make me his iesting stocke, and solace himselfe with the fondnesse of my conceipts. But staye, staye, vnhappie tongue, that thundereth forth such hatefull words against my beloued Siluanus. Oh thrise accursed wenche that can so vngently conceiue against him, that in all his demeanours, doth shew himselfe as noble as the best, but of what metall are either Monarche, King or Kelser, fra-

med

med of, otherwise then of naturall and common earth, whereof other men doe come? Or what maketh these differences, which by sottish opinion we conceiue, either of gentle or vngentle, otherwise then the shew of vertue and good conditions. Then the partie whom I loue, is both vertuous, valiant, sage, of good grace, learned and wise. Vaunt thée then Valeria, that thou likest no inferiour fondling, but worthy of thy loue, but a worthy Gentleman, indued with noble qualities, in whom both Heauen and Nature haue forgotten nothing, to make him equall to them that march in foremost ranke: It is Siluanus whom I loue, and of him I pretend to make a lawfull husband, for otherwise I detest to lead the filthie life of lawlesse lust, but thus the band of marriage being made, I may loue and liue without offence of conscience, neither shall I doe any blot or blemish to the greatnesse of my house. But if any be so scrupulous, as to thinke by marrying of him, I should diminish mine honour: It is the thing that I doe least estéeme, for what is honour worth, where the mind is voide of contentation, and where the heart is bereaued of his chiefest desire, the body remaineth restlesse, and the minde is neuer in quiet. Siluanus therefore shall be my loyall husband, meaning thereby neither to offend God nor man.

And now from hence forwards, she deuised with her selfe, how to make her loue knowne to Siluanus, not sparing when she was out of his presence, before all men to praise his great perfections, wherewith he was enriched, and in his owne presence she vsed such louing countenance towards him, that although Siluanus were but young, and had neuer béene trained vp in the Schoole of Loue, yet hée perceiued very well, that those friendly glaunces were lent him of good lyking, and those louing countenances were grounded of good will, and albeit, hee sawe the inequality and difference betwéene them both, she being sorted out of royall race, and himselfe altogether ignorant of his owne estate, and from whence hee was sprong, yet béeing nowled by Loue, whose lawes haue no respecte either to estate or dignity, he determined to followe his Fortune, & to serue her, which so louingly shewed her selfe, to requite him with the like, and the more hee called to minde the diuine beauty of his Lady, her graces, wisedome, behauiour, and curtesie, so much the more increased his desire, fortifying himselfe against all mishappes, and perilles that might succéede, and began to debate with himselfe in this manner.

How is it possible that I should be so foolish, to despise a duty so rare and precious, and to set light by that which the noblest would pursue, with all reuerence and indeauour, I am not the first, that hath obtained the loue of a Lady: no no, I see she loueth me, and shall not I requite it by yeelding loue againe. if I were so void of humanity and good nature besides I might worke mine own ouerthrow, in seeming to dispise so noble a Ladie, so the Gods would not let to minister reuenge, as they did vpon Narcissus. But ah silly wretch that I am, what folly is this that I haue now premeditated, with the perill of mine honour, and the hazard of my life: see see how far my affections begin to stray, through the hot assaults of foolish fantasie, inraged with an appetite rising on haine hope, what madnesse on me to thinke that Valerya will so much forget the greatnesse of her house, or yet imbase her selfe in respect of me poore silly soule: but what if she would be cõtented, either in respect of mariage, or other wise in respect of good will, to surrender her selfe to satisfy my request, how much were I the neare my purpose, alas nothing at al, the first, I knowe should be denied me by the Duke her father, as for any other curtesie, although I knowe it bee farre from her thought, yet surely mine owne conscience would not suffer mee, to proffer so great villanie to so noble a Lady, neither the reuerence and duety which I owe to her Father would permitte mée, to requite his gentlenesse towardes mée with so great an iniury. Cease therefore Siluanus, subdue thy sensuality, that by vanquishing thy selfe, thou maist set open the gate to fame, who with her Trompe of euerlasting glory, she may aduance thee renowned to all posterity.

But alas, shall I then giue ouer to loue my Lady Valerya, reason willes me so to doe, but loue hath so blinded all my senses, that reason giueth no maner of light, what helpe haue I then hereafter to hope for, alas I know no one, and therefore be content. Herewithall he stayed his trauaile, resoluing with himselfe to conquer his affections, and beeing in his Chamber taking pen and pricke, he sate him downe and wrote these verses following.

No shame I trust to cease from former ill,
Nor to reuert the lewdnesse of the minde,
Which hath bin trainde, and so misled by will,
To breake the bounds, which reason had assignde.

Then

I now forſake, the former time I ſpent,
And ſorie am, for that I once miſwent.

But blinde forlorne, was he that made me ſwarue,
Affection fond, was lurer of my luſt:
My fancie fixte, deſire did make me ſerue,
Vaine hope was he, that trained all my truſt:
Good liking then, ſo daſeled had my ſight,
And dimmde mine eies, that reaſon gaue no light.

O ſugred ſweet, that traindſt me to this trap,
I ſawe the bait, where hooke lay hidden faſt:
I well perceiud, the drift of my miſhap.
I knew the bit, would breed my bane at laſt.
But what for this, for ſweete I ſwallowed all,
Whoſe taſt I find, more bitter now then Gall.

But loe the fruites, that grewe by fond deſire,
I ſeeke to ſhun, that pleaſed beſt my minde:
I ſterue for cold, yet faine would quench the fire,
And glad to looſe, that faireſt I would finde.
In one ſelfe thing, I find both bane and bliſſe,
But this is ſtraunge, I like no life but this.

When he had thus penned theſe verſes, hée committed them to memory, and the next day, being in the company of certaine Gentlemen & Gentlewomen in the Court, taking a Lute, whereon he could play very well, & hauing likewiſe good knowledge in his ſong, & therewithall a very pleaſant voyce, he began to ſing this ditty before mentioned, in the middeſt whereof came in the yong Lady Valerya, wherewith Siluanus ſtayed his ſong, but ſhe ioyning her ſelfe to the Companie, ſeeing the Saint that ſecretly ſhrined in her thought ſhe had vowed her greateſt deuotion vnto, deſired Siluanus at her requeſt, to begin his Song againe, Siluanus, making the matter nothing nyce, was pleaſed very well to ſatiſfie her requeſt, and taking the Lute began his ſong, to the which the Lady gaue intentiue eare, from the beginning to the ending, and perceiuing the ſong to be made in ſome extreame paſſion forced by loue, ſhe demaunded of Siluanus who had penned thoſe verſes, who anſwered,

they were of his owne penning, and so lately done that he could not forget them: the Ladie then thinking Siluanus to be in loue with some other Gentlewoman departed very spéedily, as though some sodaine motion had happened to her mind, and comming to her Chamber shutting fast the dooze, she began to saie as followeth.

How much am I vnfortunate above all other women, that being a Ladie of such blood as I am, & yet am happened into so straung a mistrie, that in manner with mine owne mouth, I haue made request to him, which rather with all humility, ought to proffer me his seruice, and yet am scornefully reiected, and an other like to catch the birdes, whilest I doe but beat the bushe. Oh Siluanus Siluanus, déemest thou me no better worth, then so lightly to reiect my proffered loue, and shall an other that is much lesse worthy, beare awaie the swéete fruite of my desired hope, and shall possesse without deserte, the glory due to a firme and faithfull friend? No no, I can not thinke thée so ingrate, and my heart foretelleth me that it is impossible my Siluanus should wander so farre from equity, but that he is able to discerne of coulours, and will not requite me with wrong for right. I am sure not to be deceiued in my loue, I know hée loueth mée, but that hée dareth not to disclose the same, fearing I should refuse him, and call him of with shame. I will not let therefore with mine owne mouth to bewraie the same vnto him, and to manifest my good will, whereby my chast and honest amitie once knowne vnto him, vertue her selfe may knit the knot betwéene vs, which can not chuse but bring forth the fruits of true and perfect friendship.

And shall I then being a Lady of such degrée, bée constrained to sew, where euery other woman of the meanest reputation, bée ordinarily required, and that with the importunate instance of their suters, I shall then be noted of boldnesse, and be thought to straie too farre from the limites and bounds of modestie, & to make a greater shew of lightnesse, then is properly loked for in vs that be of that feminine gender, but what strictnesse is this prescribed to our sexe, that we should bee bereaued of our liberty, and so absolutely condemned of lightnesse in seeking to satisfie our lawful and honest desires, with what trampe bée we tempered withall more then men, whereby we should bée able to withstand the forces of the flesh or of power to resiste the concupiscenses which Nature in selfe hath assigned, we bée learned to bée the weaker vesselles, and yet they would haue vs more puissaunte, then either Samson or Hercules, if man and wo-

woman bée made of one mettall, it muſt néedes followe by conſequence, wée bée ſubiect to like infirmitie, from whence commeth then this freedome, that man may aſke what they deſire of vs, bee it neuer ſo lewd, and wée maie not craue any thing of them, that tendeth to good and honeſt pretence. It is tearmed to be but a mans part that ſeeketh our diſhonour, by lewde and lawleſſe Luſte, but to a Woman it is imputed for lightneſſe, to firme her lawfull lyking, with pure and loyall loue, if men will haue preheminence to doe euill, why ſhould wée bée reproued for doing well.

Whereupon ſtande I then amazed with theſe fonde opinions, my loue is not vnlawfull, neither before GOD nor man. I loue Siluanus, whom I will take for my houſband, for otherwiſe to loue him, my heart doth not intende, therefore without any farther reſpite or delaye, I will make my loue knowne vnto him, and the bande of Marriage once confirmed betweene vs, ſhall couer the fault which men would deme, neither ſhall my minde bee altered, either by the ſugred perſwaſion of friends, neither terrified with any threats, that may bée thundred forth by parents bluſtering wrath, I am not ſo farre ouerwhelmed with Pride, that in reſpecte for the greatneſſe of my parentage, I ſhould deſpiſe a Gentleman indued more with vertue then with riches, though there bee ſome that bee of this condition, that they will ſooner preferre the greatneſſe of byrth, then the greatneſſe of vertue, the aboundance of wealth, then the aboundance of witte, the perfection of beauty, then the perfection of the minde, but I am out of the number of thoſe Women, which care more to haue their Houſbands purſes well lined with money, whereby they may bee maintained in their bravery, or ſometimes fire their fancie vpon ſome youngman, that is of goodly perſonage, although voide of vertue, qualitie, and good condicions, that ought to garniſhe a Gentleman, and doth more beautifie and enrich him, then either the bare ſhewe of beauty, or any other giftes of Fortune, but I cannot employ my Loue vpon tranſitorie treaſure, when the riches of the mind is cleane taken away: no no, it ſhall better content me to ſée a meane Gentleman beloued and praiſed of euery one for his vertues, then to marry a Miſer poſſeſſed with all the goodes of the worlde, hated and ill ſpoken of for his vices. Feare not then Valeria, to followe thy determination, and to put in proofe what thou haſt pretended.

Here

Here withal staying her selfe, she beganne to practise the meane, in what manner she might bewraie her loue to Siluanus, seeking for occasion and time meete for her purpose, and although there remained in her, a certain natural shamefastnesse, wherwith maidens are commonlie accompanied, which for a time did close her mouth, and made her to deferre the time of her desolued minde, yet in the end through hir perswaded in her intent, she sent one of her maidens, willing Siluanus to come & speake with her, about certaine affaires that she had to imploy him: The maid hauing finished her message, there could neuer more ioyfull newes happen to Siluanus, who entring the chamber of Valeria, with trembling heart after he had done his reuerence, with great feare and blasefullnesse saied, for that I vnderstand your Ladiship hath to employe me about certaine affaires, I shall thinke my selfe the most happiest man in the world, if my trauaile & diligence, might any waies do you seruice, be it that therein I should offer or sacrifice mine honour or life, craning no greater benefite for the satisfaction of al my contentations receiued in this world, then to serue, obeye and honour you, so long as my life doeth last.

The Lady now, al rauished with ioy and contentation, perceiuing by his chaung of colour, the fault proceeded of vehement lone, taking him aside into a windowe. Lone had so closed vp her mouthe, that she knew not how to begin her tale, her mind was so troubled, her wits so far out of course, that her tongue failed to doe his office, in such wise that she was not able to speake one onely word,

He likewise perplexed with the like Feuer, was now astonied to see the alteration of his Ladie.

Thus these two louers, like two senceless Images, stood still beholding eche other, without any manner of moning, in the ende the Ladie taking courage in her selfe, with a trembling voice, ioyned with a maidenlike shamefastnesse, began to saie as followeth.

Beyng assured (my Siluanus) of your discretion and wisedome, which Nature hath not onely indued you withall, but art hath also accomplished, what Nature beganne to worke. I will therfore make no doubt at all, to lette you knowe the hidden secretes of my heart, neither will I goe about with circumstaunce to colour my wordes, but being wel perswaded that when you shal both heare and sauour my speeches, and therewithall sound the deapth of my deuises, you will easily coniecture, that my enterprises be none other then iuste,

and

and that my alleadged reasons, are grounded of good pretence, I thinke sithence your arriuall here in the Court of the Duke my Father, you haue not seene me in any behauiour, otherwise then vertue doeth permitte, nor in any my demeanours exceeding the bounds of modesty, otherwise then becommeth a maiden of my calling, being descended of so worthy a stocke, but if this be a fault that being prouoked by the pureneſſe of my heart, & fidelity of my good will, who to keepe the same inuiolable, do voluntarily offer my selfe to the honest disposition of your iudgement, as it shall please you to conceiue of me, I haue then committed a fault in liking you too well, but I trust nothing at all offended God, who knoweth the innocencie of my crime. Thinke not Siluanus, that I am the friend of Fortune, & practise pleasure alone without vertue, for it is modesty that commaundeth me, and honesty is the guide of my conceipts, sweating & protesting by the Almighty God, that neuer man shall touch Valeria, except it be in Mariage, and he that otherwise would assayle me, I haue a heart that shall encourage my hands to Sacrifice my life. And now Siluanus, if you will not thinke me more prodigall of my present, then your fancie will serue you to take in good part, behold, it is you that I haue chosen for my spouse and loyall husband. And although I had determined to dissemble that, which now I haue laied open vnto you, yet reposing my selfe in your vertue and honesty, I trust I shall not haue cause to repent me, for any thing that I haue either said or done.

Siluanus, which all this while hearing this heauenly harmonie, with full assurance of that he most wished for, albeit he sawe no possibility how to bring to passe this desired mariage, yet determined not to refuse so great a preferment, being so franck and liberally offered, answered in this manner.

I know not Madame, with what humility and reuerence I might receiue, and accept this your great bounty and nobleneſſe, so graciously offered vnto me, I doe acknowledge my condition and state too base, and that my loue may be thought to presume too far beyond the bounds of order, considering that my ignobility and birth, are no meete matches for such a peereleſſe Princes, yet this I dare boldly affirme, that if loue and entire affection borne to your Ladiship, might serue to countervaile that defect, which by place of birth the Destinies haue denied me, I dare vndertake I should aswel deserue to be receiued, as he that is lineally descended from the greatest Mo-

nacthy of the worlde. The which loue if till this time I haue delaied to open, I beseech you Madame, to impute it to the greatnes of your estate, and to the duety of my calling, but now for asmuch as by your owne motion, grace, courtesie and great liberality the same is proferred, and that of your owne bounty, it pleaseth you to accept me for yours: I humblie beseech you, not to dispose of mee as of a husband, but as of one which both is, and shall be your seruant for euer. Thus said he, taking her by the hand, kissed it with great deuotion, his tongue and wits were so rapt and tied: As the Ladie perfectly perceiued this alteration, and seeing it to proceede of loue, replied on this manner.

Then my Siluanus, there needeth at his present no farther circumstance, but for that I am well assured, there are some that will be offended with my choice, but especially the Duke my Father, who will conceiue some great displeasure against mee: there resteth then that this our contract bee kept very secret, vntill it please GOD to appoint the time, that the rest of our determinations, may without daunger be consumate and accomplished, In the meane time, trusting that your desire is godly, and ꝑ the friendship you pretend to beare me, is founded vpō vertue, and to be concluded by mariage, receiue me for your spouse and lawfull wife, you shall haue such part in mee, as without any regard to the obedience and duty that I owe to my Parents I am yours, being ready & disposed to obey you, so far as my honour may permit me.

These two louers now grounding themselues, the one in the others fidelity, could not so cunningly dissemble & cloke their affections, but that it was easily perceiued by their secret glaunces, and countenances conueied from one to other (and as wee haue a Prouerbe) (it is ill haulting before a creeple) so there were manie about the Court, that were so well studied in the Schoole of Loue, that they were able to haue commenced Maisters of art, and could easily coniecture from whence those rowling lookes did proceed, that beeing now assured of that which before, was but suspected, the bruite was spread about the Courte of the loue that was betweene Siluanus and Valeria, that in the ende it came to the Duke her fathers eare, who taking the matter verie greeuously, that his daughter to whome the inheritance of the Dukedome remained after his decease, should so meanely bestowe her loue of a fondling founde in the Woodes. And minding to finde a remedie for the matter willed Siluanus that

he

in paine of his life, within twenty daies he should depart the Court; and neuer after to be séene within the iurisdictions of the Dukedome of Vasconia.

Valeria now hauing intelligence what had happened, had no leasure to vexe or molest her selfe, when time rather required a spéedie remedie, for the incountering of those mishappes, deuised with Siluanus to conuey her selfe away, contented rather to liue in the fellowship of an honest louing husband, with whom shee should holde faithfull & loyall company, with what estate and Fortune soeuer it might please God to appoint, then to liue without him, beautified with the graces and foolish names of honour and preheminence.

Siluanus, contented to satisfie her desire, with the hazard of his life, yéelded to her request, and before the twenty daies were expired, so cleanely conueied himselfe and Valerya a way, that when they were missing, the Duke wist not which wayes to sende after them. Wherefore in a great fury, he spared not to sende out great companies, which posting euery way, made enquiry & search after thē, but all in vaine: for Siluanus had so disguised himselfe and Valeria, that without any manner of trouble, they quietly passed the country, & hauing fréed themselues frō out ẏ daunger of the Duke, desiring that ẏ day of their mariage might now be prefixed, the which by mutual consent, was presently determined, & by great Fortune (or rather cōductiō by the prouidence of god) they happened to arriue in the countrye Village, where Duke Sappho that was father to Siluanus, had remained al this while Sexten of the Parish. In this village because it was a place free frō resort, wherby they might remaine vnknown, and in the better safety, they purposed aswell to celebrate their Mariage, as for a time to make their aboade, till matters were better quieted, & that they might at leasure resolue, what course were best for them to take. Siluanus nowe hauing conferred with the Priest, the Mariage day was appointed, where the poore belrynger taking the view of this new married couple, fel in great liking of Siluanus, not for that he knew him to be his son, for therof he could haue no māner of suspitiō, aswell for that he deemed he had bin deuoured in ẏ woods, by some wild beast, as also because his name was chaunged, but whether it were by the instigation or secrecie of nature, or otherwise by the wil & pleasure of God, to bring to passe that, which afterwards happened in effect, this poore Sexten I say, lead by the secret motion of his owne affections, proffered Siluanus that if his seruice

might any waies stand him in stede (for that he was a stranger in the place) he should vse him in any respect, and should finde him ready to stand him in such stead, as his poore ability might any waies permit.

Siluanus in like case hauing forgotten his Father, beeing seperated from him in his infancie, yet nothing despising his friendly offer, craued his helpe for the hyring of a Chamber, for some reasonable rent, till time that he might better prouide for himselfe. The Sexten very glad that he had so good opportunity to pleasure him, brought him with his wife to his owne house, where he lodged him in the best roome that he had, profering not onely his house, but al that was in it to be at their disposition and pleasure. This new married couple, now gladding and sporting themselues, with all such sweet imbracements, as they can better describe, which haue bin possessed with the like delights: but as some will say, it is the mans part to be first wearied in those Veneriall sports, so Siluanus hauing now well feasted himselfe, with that sweete repast, had leasure to bethinke him of his owne estate: began inwardly to growe into great sorrow and heauinesse, not so much for himselfe, as for his wife, who for his sake had disposed her selfe from so great honour, abandoning her friends, contented to yeeld her selfe a thrall to Fortune.

These cogitations did so nip him, that he could not so well dissemble his griefe, but that his wife perceiued some disquietnesse in his minde, and therefore very grieuously she demaunded of him, to shew her the cause of his discontentment, which by outward appearance, seemed inwardly so much to molest him.

Siluanus hearing his Ladies request, answered in this wise, my deare wife, the sweetest companion that euer man did possesse, for so much as you so earnestly desire to vnderstand, what it is that so much withdraweth my delights, I will not let to bewraie the truth, which is this, when I consider with my selfe, of your present estate and condition, who from the tippe and height of dignity, haue not spared for my sake to surrender your selfe, to become a subiect to all mishappes, besieged on euery side, with the future assaultes of ordinary Fortune: it maketh me therefore haue greater care, by what meanes I might indeauour my selfe, to maintaine & continue your estate: though not according to your worthines & calling, yet according to your wel contentment and liking. And hereupon conceiuing in my head diuerse imaginations, no meanes but one in my fancie seemeth

semeth best, which is, that I goe to the Court of the Emperour Claudius, who at this present is leading a greate bande to encounter the Turke, at whose hands I doubt not, but to receive some good entertainement, and besides the honour and reputation, I may gaine by good deserte, I may likewise reape such living and good liking of the Emperour, that in despight of Fortunes teeth, we may live hereafter a quiet and honourable life, to our greate ioy and comfort. But when I did consider the beloued companie of you deare wife, I feared to bewray that, which now I have disclosed, not knowing in what part you wold take it, that I shuld so sodainely depart. Lo here the cause of my disquietnesse, which you desire so instantly to know.

The Lady which was wise, perceiuing the great loue that her husband did beare her, when he had staied himselfe from talke, with glad and merry countenance, answered in this wise.

Ah Siluanus, the exempler of all vertue and gentlenesse, let death and fortune do what they list, for I count my selfe more then satisfied of all that is past, by the onely enioying of your presence, contenting my selfe to be a partaker of your misfortunes, & haue no doubt but that I can so moderate my affections, that during my life I will rest better contented with that which your ability will permit, be it neuer so meane, then otherwise to bee honoured with names and titles of nobility in Princely state or port hauing not your presence. Disquiet not your selfe therefore, but persever in your determination, and that sorrowe which shall assaile me by reason of your absence I will sweeten and lenesse with contentation to see your commendable desire appeased: & the pleasant memory of your valiant factes shal beguile my penstue thoughts, hoping that our next meeting shall be more ioyful & glad, thē this our parting shal be either beanie or sad.

The Ladies answer did wonderfully quiet the mind of Siluanus, and calling his host the Sexten vnto him, whom he had made partaker of his determinations, he departed, leauing his wife such monie and Jewels as they had remaining: and comming to the Court of the Emperour Claudius, he was very wel intertained, and the rather for that the Emperour had great nede of men to supply his armie, which had sustained sundry conflicts, and diuers ouerthrowes, for the Turke did wonderfully increach vpon the Emperour, & had taken sondry Cities, Towns, and Castles from him, & was like euery day more to preuaile then other, that now the Emperour began to repent him, of the slender accompt he had made of the Souldiers

in ꝯ time of peace, for that he had to few that were sufficient to serue him in his warres: For in stéede of Experience, Valiaunce, and Policie) which thée ought to be gouernours, commaunders and chéefe officers in a Campe) he was glad to preferre Vainglorie, Foolishe hardinesse and Rashnesse: Simple sottes that were more fitter to waite in Gentlewomans chambers, then to be made Captaines, or leaders in the warres.

The Emperour now standing in great distresse for want of men, for those that he had made greatest accompt of in the time of peace, were now able to stand him in no stéede in the time of warres: and those that had braued it vp and downe the Court in the new cutts, strange fashions, their haire frisseled, looking with such grisly and terrible countenaunces, enough to make a wiseman beléeue they were cleane out of their wittes, now in the time of warres, were glad to runne vnder a Gentlewomans Farthingall to hide them.

The Emperour (I say) béeing thus perplexed, called to his remembrance the iniurie that he had done Sappho, whom he had banished, onely to satisfie the willes of those that were about him, which he knew did hate him more of spight, then for any occasion the Duke had giuen. Without any farther delaie therefore, the Emperour sent sundrie messengers into euery part of Christendom to make inquirie, that who so euer could finde the Duke, should be worthily recompenced, & those Proclamations were spread through euery Region, in Citie, Towne, and Village. In so much that in this Parish where the Duke remained Sexten (as you haue heard (the Priest made inquirie on Sonday in the Church, as the custome is) that where as about fourteéne or fiftéene yeares sithence, the Duke of Mantona was banished by the Emperour, which was procured rather by enuie, then for any desert, as now it was proued, who so euer therfore could giue any intelligence of the same Duke, should be very liberally recompensed by the Emperour.

The Sexten now hearing these newes, did thinke it more better to liue still in his Sextens rowme, where he remained without enuie, then to become againe the Duke of Mantona, subiect to the spight of hatefull persons. But calling to his minde his wife and daughter, which he thought remained yet aliue (although he knew not where) and for the great loue that he bare to Siluanus, whose wife remained in his house (as you heard) séeing that Fortune offered him so good opportunitie to pleasure them, onely for their sakes,

resolued

reſolued himſelfe to goe to the Emperour. But firſt comforting his geſt Valeria, whom for a time he ſhould leaue in his houſe, onely with ſuch ſeruants as her ſelfe had about her: he tolde her that he was well aſſured where to finde this Duke, that was ſo much inquired after, and that he doubted not, (if it were but in reſpect of his good newes) he ſhould worke Siluanus, her huſband into ſome credit with the Duke, who might likewiſe procure his better preferment with the Emperour.

And thus the Sexten departed, and with all conuenience came to the Court of the Emperour, to whom when he had made himſelfe knowne, he was moſt honourably receiued, and great ioy & gladnes was made throughout the whole Court: the Emperour now in conſideratiõ of the iniurie he had done him, did not onely reſtore him to his former rowme and dignitie, but alſo aduaunced him in honour and eſtimation, to be preferred before all other next vnto himſelfe.

Thus after many benefits receiued of the Emperour, the Duke prepared himſelfe, accompanied with many his friends, to goe to the Emperours Campe, of the which he was made Generall, where he knew well how to behaue himſelfe, and giuing out new ordinances, he appointed certaine ſuch as he himſelfe knew worthy, & gaue them charge, amongſt the reſt, ſeeing Siluanus who all this while remained in the Campe, whom the Duke did very well know, although Siluanus did little ſuſpect that a poore Sexten of a Pariſh, ſhould become a General to an Emperours armie. The duke perceiuing himſelfe to be vnknowne to Siluanus, was contented ſo to remaine for a time, but yet deſirous to ſee what was in him, he gaue him the leading of certaine horſemen, with the which Siluanus ſerued ſo valiantly, and therewithall had ſo happie ſucceſſe, that euery man extolled vp to the heauens, the worthineſſe of Siluanus. This pleaſed the Duke paſſing wel, & the Duke hauing now ſundry times incountred with the power of the Turkes, & had giuen them many ouerthrowes, he was now preparing a great force, for the recouerie of the Citie of Cayoe, the which the Turkes had taken before from the Emperour. And calling Siluanus vnto him, he ſaid: God grant young Gentleman, that your end agrée with your good beginning, then making Siluanus to kneele, he dubbed him knight, and made him Colonell of twentie Enſignes.

Siluanus after he had done his reuerence, thanked the Duke of the honour and fauour, which it had pleaſed him to do him, promiſing to do ſo well in time to come, as he ſhould not be deceiued in his con-

conceiued opinion, whereof he gaue assured testimonie at the assault that was giuen to the Citie before mentioned, where he behaued himselfe so valiantly, as he was the first that mounted vpon the walles, and by his dexteritie and inuincible force, made way to the Souldiours in the breach, whereby they entered and tooke the citie, killing and dryuing out their enimies before them. In many such like attempts Siluanus still shewed himselfe so noble and valiant, that his praise and renowme was sounded in euery place.

The Duke now hauing recouered againe all such cities, townes, and other Fortes, which the Turke had before taken from the Emperour, and therewithall had banished the Turkes from out the bounds and borders of the Empire, and a League agréed vpon betweene the Emperour and the Turke. The Armie being broken vp, and Souldiours discharged, euery man well recompensed for his seruice, according as he had deserued. Siluanus likewise, who by his worthinesse, hauing not onely made himselfe famous to the world, but also had well lined his purse with good store of golde, bethinking him now of his faire Ladie, came to the Duke to haue taken his leaue, but the Duke minding now to performe the good that he ment to Siluanus, was resolued in his minde, that Siluanus with his wife should be his guests, as well at Mantona where he was Duke, as they had beene before, where he was but a Sexten, said to Siluanus as followeth.

Sir knight, what haste is this, that you would so sodainly withdraw your selfe from out my companie, belike you haue some faire wife, to whom you make such spéed to be gone, but sir content your selfe to beare me companie to the Emperours Court, where I doubt not but you shall receiue some better recompence for your seruice so happily begun, for it is not requisite, but that the vertue of valiance, ought to be rewarded and cherished by Princes, that be aided in their necessitie, with the diligence of such vertuous and noble Gentlemen as your selfe. Siluanus greatly comforted with these words of the Duke, was well pleased to waite vpon him: Thus they take their iourney towards the great Citie of Chirona, which was in the vttermost borders of the Emperours dominions, there the Duke purposed to staye a while, to recreate himselfe with the rest of his company.

Now it fortuned that the valiant acts, and hautie enterprises of Siluanus were so renowmed and spred, that the fame thereof

came

came to the eares, of the Duke of Vasconya, that was father to Valerya the wife of Siluanus, who with al possible spéede made such haste, that he came to Cherona, where he found Siluanus in the companie of the Duke of Mantona, to whom turning himselfe, he saide as followeth.

Sir Duke the onely hope that I haue, that you will not let to extende Justice vpon the mischéeuous and vngratious acts of wicked men, doth let me at this instant, to forbeare with mine owne hands, to auenge the wrong that I assure my selfe, to haue receiued of this traitour Siluanus.

The companie were wonderfully abashed with these wordes, but especially the Duke of Mantona, who loued Siluanus more dearely then any other.

But the other going still forwardes in his tale saied, if the harte breake that afflicteth the sonle of a woefull father, whose house is made desolate by loosyng his child, by the mischieuous inticements of a Theefe, if this president I sate, moue you not to minister such speedie reuenge, as the Lawe doeth prescribe, I suppose that all impunitie of vice and sinne hath place on your behalfe. And there with all staying his talke, but yet by his gesture and countenance so inraged, that he séemed like a man that were beside him selfe.

The Duke of Mantona now perceiuing the matter, that Valeria, was the daughter of the Duke of Vasconya, whom he supposed to haue béen of some meane birth and parentage was wonderfully sorie for Siluanus, whose facte by the Lawe deserued death, and séeing the Duke in such a furie, he wiste not by what meanes to worke Siluanus safetie, for to intreate the Duke he thought it but vaine, and to bring Siluanus to aunswere the facte, he knew the Lawe would condemne him, & therefore knowing where Valerya did remaine, whom he knew did loue Siluanus as her own life, & thinking that her teares might lenifie and soften the hardened heart of the Duke her father. He therefore priuely sent for her, to bée brought immedeatly to the Cittie of Cherona, in the meane time he committed Siluanus into safe custodie, and desired the Duke at his requeste to stay himselfe a while, & he should haue such Justice on Siluanus, as himselfe would require.

Matters béeing thus pacified for a while, I will in like case lette them rest for a time, and will now discourse how it befell to the Duc-

ches Meſſilina, with her daughter Phylene.

You haue heard before how by conſtraint of weather at the Sea, they were driuen to this Citie of Cherona, where the Duke now remained, and at her firſt comming, falling to her worke as before ſhe had done at Taryſſa, a rich Marchaunt that dwelt in the Towne, taking the viewe of this new come worke woman, fell into ſo great a liking with her, that onely to haue acceſſe to come into her companie, hee beſtowed more money in cloath to make him ſhirtes & handcarchifes in one weeke, then he was able to weare out in three yeares after, which he put to her to make, whereby hee became ſomething well acquainted with her, but to the end that ſhe might thinke her ſelfe ſomething the better beholding vnto him, hée proffered her a more conuenient houſe then that ſhee was in, which hée would furniſh with all manner of houſehould ſtuffe for a reaſonable rent. She being very glad of ſo good an offer, became his Tenaunt. The Marchaunt now perceiuing his time did ſo well ſerue him, without any great circumſtaunce, declared vnto her, the great good will he bare her, but Meſſilina ſo delated him with ſuch wiſe and reaſonable anſwers, that from time to time the Marchant himſelfe could not importunatly craue that which with ſuch modeſty, ſhé ſo honeſtly denied him.

Now there laie in this citty of Cherona, the old Dutches of Petrona, who hauyng intelligence of Meſſilina to be ſo good a worke-woman, ſhé ſent for her, to whom ſhé put ſondrie parcelles of worke, which ſhe ſo well finiſhed to the liking of the Dutches that from time to time ſhe ſtil plide her with the like, whereby Meſſilina, with her daughter Phylene, had continuall recourſe to the Pallace of the Dutches, where Arabianus the only ſonne of the Dutches of Petrona (and inheritour of the dukedome, but that he was vnder age) did marke and behold the beautie and good grace of this yong Seameſter Phylene, was ſo clogged and fettered in the bandes of loue, that all other thoughts ſeemed lothſome vnto him, and euery other hope diſpleaſaunt, in reſpect of the pleaſure that he ſuffered, by thinking of his faire Phylene, wherefore baityng himſelfe with hope, and tickled onely by loue, he determined what ſoeuer happened to loue her.

Which being perceiued by his mother, ſhe began very ſharpely to rate him, blaming him that would ſo indiſcretly place his loue, not waiyng his eſtate and birth, as came of Princely race, and now would

would make him seeme a fable to the worlde, to like of such a one so farre unworthy his degree.

Arabianus falling downe upon his knées, most humbly desired his mother to beare with all that was past, and although it were truth that she had saied, that he déemed her for her birth to be unworthie his degrée, yet shée deserued for her beautie to be compared to the greatest dame, and brauest minion els where. And whereas other girles by artificiall meanes and trumperies, doe inforce that which the heauens haue denied them, yet Phylene had no other ornament then that which Nature had inlarged in her: and otherwise for her vertue, wisedome, and modestie, hee knewe it to be such by reporte of many, as she might bée a Lanterne to the greatest Dame that liued.

Notwithstanding Madam, for so much as you doe take my facte in so ill parte, considering the reuerence, that I owe to the place which you hold on my behaulfe, and the duetie and obedience that God will and hath commaunded, that children should beare to those that haue begotten and borne them: if it please you to pardon me of this that is past, I protest that from hence forth, I will bée more wise and better aduised, howe I enter into any thing that might turne to any such consequence, or any maner of waies to offend you.

The Dutches knowing all to be true that her sonne had saied, very well pleased with his speeches, remained satisfied, thinking in her mind in déede, that if Phylene had bin the daughter but of some meane Gentleman, her sonne should never haue sought farther for a wife,

From this time forwards, although Arabianus by the perswasion of his mother, had vowed to reuolt and let slip the loue that he bare to Phylene, yet hee could not so clearely lose his liking, but that hee did manifest some parte of his good will, by giftes and good countenaunces which still he bestowed upon Phylene, causing his mother likewise to bestow many liberall rewards upon Messilina, thus the mother and the daughter perceiued them selues a thousand times beholding to the olde Dutches and her sonne.

In this meane space the Marchaunt before mentioned had buried his wife, and knowing no other but that Messilina, his Tenaunte had bin a widowe, he began now a freshe sute, and with great importunitie requested her in the way of mariage, and so hardly he laied vnto her, that Messilina not knowing otherwise how to rid him,

confessed vnto him that she had a husband aliue and therefore might not marry.

The Marchaunt thinking these to be but delaies to shift him of, came to this point, that if hereafter he could proue by her own confession to bée a widowe, that then before witnesse shee would take him for her lawfull housbande, and till that time hee would no farther trouble her till he had made his proofe, shee being glad to bée at rest, thinking that he should worke very wisely to make her confesse her selfe to be a widow, agréed to his request, and witnesse was had in the matter. The Marchaunt now letting his matter rest a time for his better purpose, in the ende comming vnto her, hee tolde her, that although she were so discourteous to forsake his friendship in euery respect, first in the way of good fellowship, and after in the way of marriage, whereby hee was driuen to goe seeke farther, but now hauing founde a wife in the countrie, to whom he was assured, and ment priuily to be married, yet for the olde friendshippe that hée bare her, considering that hee would presently remaine in the country altogether, and forsake the Citty, therefore for her better security and assurance of her dwelling, hée would make her a Lease of the house that shée dwelt in, for one and twenty yeeres, if it might doe her any pleasure, without paying any penny Income.

Messilina giuing him great thankes tooke his offer very courteously, and the lease was put to making, which the Marchant signed and deliuered, and here withall desired her single Obligation for the performance of some small rent, were it neuer so little, that shee might acknowledge him to bee her Landlord, the which shée neuer denyed to giue.

The Obligation was made in this manner. Know al men by this presentes, that I Messilina widow, &c. so foorth with wordes in manner and forme of euery Obligation. This Obligation thus made, was signed & deliuered by Messilina to the Marchãt, who had now gotten that so long he had sought for, and by vertue of this Obligation, craued Messilina to bée his wife, she denaying his demaund, but what could that preuaile, when he had her owne hande and seale to shew, whereby shée confessed her selfe a Widow, and then by her owne agreement (as you haue heard before) she must yeeld her selfe to be his wife.

This matter was long in tending and proouing, in so much that

that the Duke being now in the towne, ministring of iustice to such as would craue it, the Marchant brought the matter before the Duke, who hearing the maner of the bargaine, and so many witnesses to affirme the same, gaue sentence that the Marchant ought indéd to haue her. But Messilina falling at the feete of the Duke, desiring him with teares to deferre his iudgement: the Duke now taking better view of the woman, knowing her both by her voyce, and also by looking well on her face, perceiued assuredly that it was his owne wife, he called againe to the Marchant to sée his Obligation, which when he had receiued, he said in this maner.

Maister Marchant, this Obligation which you haue deliuered me, now I haue perused with better aduise, I find it to bée neither sufficient nor lawfull, for this woman that you would make a widow, without doubt is Married, and hath a husband, now she being vnder couert baron, your Obligation is vnpleadable, and I know not whom you should blame, whether your selfe, or the Scriuener. And herewithall béing repleat with great ioy and gladnesse, taking his wife vp in his armes, very louingly imbraced her, he said.

Ah my deare and louing wife, how much am I bound to render innumerable thankes to the almightie GOD, that when all hope was past, haue yet againe recouered my greatest hope and comfort. Messilina likewise perceiuing her Lord and husband, clasping her hands about his neck, was not able to speake a worde for ioy and contentation: the company that stood by, amased to sée this sodaine hap, were likewise very ioyfull to sée this friendly méeting. The Marchant séeing how he had béene deceiued, tare his Obligation, and departed all ashamed. The duke now desirous to sée his daughter Phylene, caused her mother to send for her, who not knowing her Father otherwise then by report, fell downe on her knées to craue his blessing: The Duke taking her vp, kissing her with fatherly affection, could not stay his teares, in remembring her brother Aurelianus, whom he déemed to be dead.

These newes were sodainly spred throughout the Citie of Cherona, insomuch that Arabianus, hauing now intelligence, that Phylene was the daughter of the noble Duke Sappho, certifying his mother the truth which he had learned, without any great deliberation, both the mother and the sonne comming to visit the Duke and his company, where they were very well welcomed, but especially to Messilina, to whom the old Duches and her Sonne both

had him very bountifull: And when a while they had paſſed the time with pleaſant diſcourſes of all that had paſſed, the Duches of Petrona craued Philene in marriage for her ſonne. The Duke beeing made priuy to the matter, knowing Arabianus to become of great deſcent, and to bee indued with large and faire poſſeſſions, ſeeing him likewiſe to bee a toward young gentleman, would not ſtand againſt it, but referred the matter to his daughters liking. Philene who had bin greatly bounde to the courteſie of the young Duke and had receiued many giftes and good turnes at his handes, would not do as a number of theſe nice dames, that will many times make dainty of that they would faineſt come by, gaue her free conſent. There was then no more to doe, but to prepare for the mariage, which was preſently ſolemnized with great pompe and glory.

By this Valeria (whom as you haue heard before the Duke had ſent for) was come to Cherona, who was priuely lodged by the Dukes commaundement in a priuate place. The day now being come, that Siluanus was brought to his anſwer, hee could not deny the fact wherewith he was charged, but that he had ſtolne Valeria frō her father, by which confeſſion the Lawe condemned him to die. There were many that knewe the noblenes of Siluanus, that began to entreat the duke of Vaſconia to remit the fact, but all in vaine, for the more they entreated, the more he haſtened to ſee his execution.

The Duke of Mantoua ſeeing his great obſtinacie, did thinke it high time to finde a remedy for Siluanus, if it might bee, therefore he ſaid, Sir Duke, were it poſſible that this condemned man, who is like (ſo far as I can ſee) to beare the whole brunt, and yet might bee enticed to this fact by your daughters meanes, or at the leaſt, your daughter muſt be haſte partner of this fault, & yelded with her good will to come away, for otherwiſe it had bin impoſſible for him, to haue brought her frō out your Court, which if it be true, if you will néeds ſee Juſtice ſo duely executed in the one, I cannot ſee how your daughter can goe quite, but muſt be as well partaker of the puniſhment, as ſhe was in the fact, by yelding her conſent.

The Duke of Vaſconia anſwered, as it is the office and duety of euery good Juſticer, to knowe the valour and difference, betweene vertue and vice, to the ende that all vertuous actes may bee honoured, and the contrary chaſtiſed & puniſhed: otherwiſe hee is not worthy the name of a righteous iudge but of a cruell & traiterous tyrāt, wherefore Sir Duke, you ſitting here in the place of Juſtice, to miniſter

ser equitie & right, to every one that calleth. Then I desire that I may haue the Law extended vpon this wretch Silu anus, as for my daughter that you speake of, as I knowe not where she is, so I doe not desire to learne what is become of her, but this I protest, that if euer I may finde her, rather then she should escape vnpunished, I will not let with mine owne hands to do execution vpon her, according to her demerites, and the filthinesse of her facte from henceforth denouncing her to be any child of mine, and make no better account of her, otherwise then to be a filthie strompet, vnworthy of me her father, or to chalenge her descent from such a stocke.

The Duke of Mantona was now troubled worse then before, for where as he had some hope, that the hūble sute of Valeria should something haue moued her father to compassion, he now thought that her sight would rather increase his rage and furie: Againe he thought, that to bring her into his presence, if he continued in one mode, he might worke Valeria so great prejudice, as he would hardely forie to see. Yet thinking with him selfe, that it was impossible, that a Father should be so voide of good Nature, to see the vtter ruine of his child without any remorse: He caused Valeria to bee sent for, who, being conducted to the place, seeing her Father and the rest of the companie, shee begamne to coniecture that all was not well. But when Siluanus saiwe his Valeria, wondering by what meanes she was brought to so euill a banquet, remembring what wordes her father before had protested, hee began with a piteous voice to crie out.

O my deare beloued wife, the onely cause of my ioye and quiet, what euill Fortune hath conducted thee to this place, what frowarde Fates haue forced thee, that thou shouldest be made a companion of my misshappes. O fraile and inconstant Fortune, how hast thou fronted my honest desires with such crooked spight, y where I coueted the countenance of greatest credite, there I am forced to hazard the losse of life and all, what crooked aspect hath gouerned my proceedinges, that the hoped time I spent in this Warlike seruice, should thus conclude with his contrary, and I forced as it were by Fate to followe the vnhappie euent of the same, wherein I doe confesse my Predestinate follies. But such are the sondrie dealinges of this life, as those that tende their steps to monsterous mountaines, doe sometime scarce conclude with meane Mole hilles, the sondrie conflictes of Fortune, masking my hope with a shewe of happie

reward

reward, hath not onely wracked me, but it threatneth the sequell of worse successe: That insteed of happy and quiet life, my dayes shalbe abridged with most shamefull and vile Death. O Valeria, Valeria the ioy and comfort of my life, I shall no more see that incomparable beautie of thine, which darkeneth and obscureth the Rayes and Beames of the Sunne.

Then turning himselfe to the Duke of Vasconia, he said, I most humbly beseech your grace, to haue compassion vpon mee, not for that I would consume my life in your displeasure, I make offer of the same to your mercifull will and disposition, chusing rather to dye, and to leaue your grace satisfied and contented, then to liue a happy life, your Princely minde displeased: and albeit, the right good intent and vnstained conscience is free from fault, yet the iudgment of men hath farther relation to the exteriour appearance, then to vertues force. Is it a sinne to marry, is it a fault to flye and auoide the sinne of whoredom? What Lawes be these then, where the marriage bed and ioyned Patrimonie, is pursued with like seuerity, as Murther, Theft, Adulterie. But seeing the fault of this mishap, to arise by my predestinate euill luck, I most humbly beseech you, to mitigate your rage, and to conceiue no sinister opinion of this your worthy daughter, whose smallest griefe, is my double paine, as for my selfe I am well pleased with my misfortune, contented to sacrifice my life, onely to receiue your cleare acquittance for my offence, and will make satisfaction with the price of my bloud.

The Duke of Vasconia bending his browes, answered: No traitour no, it is not thy life that shall appease my furie, but I will so coole the whorish heate of your Minion, for whom you séeme so much to plead, that I will make her an example to all others, for doing of an acte so detestable. But what abuse haue they committed vnder the title of Marriage, thinking without remorse of conscience, by that meanes to continue their mischiefe, and their promise and faith, that was made vnder a Bushe, must serue for a cloake and disard for their most filthie whoredome. But what if their marriage were concluded, and confirmed by God himselfe? Is Siluanus a man worthy to be alyed or mingled with the royall bloud of the house of Vasconia, no, no, I vowe I will neuer take sound nor rest full slepe, vntill I haue dispatched that infamous fact from our bloud, and that villaine whoremonger with his trull, be payd according to their deserts.

Valeria

Valeria now knowing how matters were lyted out, and hearing this cruell Sentence pronounced by her Father, fell downe vpon her knées, and bitterly crying out, she said: My deare father, most humbly I beséech you, if the no other thing may appeale your Ire, then the life of the offender, let not this Gentleman abide the penaunce of that, which he neuer committed, be reuenged on me, by whom the faults (if a womans faith to her husband, may be termed a fault) is done. And lette this infortunate gentleman depart, who God knowes is innocent of any other crime, then what he was brought into onely by my prouocation. And as she was aboute to haue proceéded farther in her talke, her father interrupted her saying.

Haue you found your tongue now prétie peate, then wé must haue an Aimon for Parrat: How durst thou trompette chalenge me to bée thy Father. That without regard, either of my renowne, or of the honour of my house, thou are content to bée abandoned from this noble estate, and to become a fugitiue and a straunger, to followe a rogue vp and downe the Countrey, no Pinion no, thinke not that any Feminine flatterie, shall state me from doyng thée to Death, nor your partyng that standes by you, shall escape with his life, verely beléeuing that in time it shall bée knowne, what profite the worlde shall gaine, by purging the same of such an infected plague: And I doe hope besides this, that in time to come, men shal praise this deede of mine, who for preserving the honor of my house, haue chosen rather to doe to death two offendours, then to leaue the one of them aliue, as lesse faultie or giltlesse then the other.

Valeria once againe falling prostrate before her Father, saied: I most humbly beséech you, for that all other comforte is denied mee, that I may craue this onely grace at your handes, for the last good that euer I hope to receiue, which is, that you being thus grieuously offended with mee, doe vengeaunce at your pleasure vppon her, who willingly yéeldeth her selfe to the death, with the effusion of her blood, to satisfie your Ire, graunte onely that Siluanus, who is innocent and frée from fault may goe quite.

But her father no longer able for anger to heare her speake, crieth out to the Duke to haste the execution, the Duke of Mantona, whose heart did bléed in his beallie for sorrow, perceiuing it follie to delaye longer time, gaue Sentence of death, and present execution to bée made, although he tooke so great sorrow for them, as if his daughter

Violene should haue borne them companie: but he was not able to helpe it, the lawes and ordinaunces of the Countrey would not otherwise permit. And thinking to take his last farewell of Siluanus, he sated, O Siluanus the glorie and honour of all yong gentlemen that euer were, that bée now, or shall be hereafter this, whose vertue, valiaunce, and worthie exploites, doe glister emongst the multitude, as the Sunne beames doe vpon the circuet of the earth: Oh that thy hard Fortune should conduct thée to such distresse, that only by thine owne valiaunce and prowesse, hast escaped so many daungers, amongst thy thronged enemies, and now thy ruine and ouerthrowe should bée thus wrought, amidest thy assured friends, that knowes not how to helpe it. What heapes of cares hath besiegedme on euery side: To thinke that I should craue thy company, whereby thou art brought into the middest of so great mischéefe, which otherwise mightest haue escaped this mishape, and thou Valeria would God thy vnfortunat horse, which departed from thée, thinking to doe thy husband pleasure, had remained with thée a poze Serten still, till this present date.

The reste of the companie that stod by, hearing the Duke to make so great lamentation, was likewise stricken into a marueious griefe and sorrowe, in so much that euery one that durst speake, cried to the Duke of Vasconia for pardon, and that he would remitte the offence, and what pittie it were, if he should séeke the death of so noble a Gentleman as Siluanus, had shewed himselfe to be: But the Duke persewering still in one mind asked them, with what face they could make request for a barlet of no reputation, whom he had found in the woodes, and brought him vp to that estate he was come to, not knowing who was his father, but by séeming some poze Countrey clowne, and forgetting him selfe from whence hée sprong, neglecting so many benefites, which he had bestowed vpon him, would enter into those thinges, so farre vnséemely and excéeding his degrée.

The Duke of Mantona, giuing good eare to this tale, remembering his Sonne Aurelianus, whom he had lost in the woods about those partes, questioned with the Duke, of the time, and what apparell the child had on at that present, who in all thinges shewed a troth as it was: he demaunded farther how he knewe his name to be Siluanus, or whether he had any other name. yes quoth the Duke of Vasconia) his name he sated was Aurelianus, which my selfe chang-

ed

to to Siluanus, because I fonnd him in the woodes.

Here withall without any farther staie, the Duke of Mantona running hastely vpon Siluanus, imbrasing him in his armes, cryng: O my sonne, my sonne, & with this sodaine ioye, the teares trickled downe his chekes so fast, that he was not farther able to speake one word.

The Duke of Vasconia much amazed to see this sight, but a greate deale more glad, that Siluanus had found out such a father, and now nothing at all offended with his daughters choyce, came likewise with chearfull countenaunce, and imbrased Siluanus, desiring both the Duke his Father, and himselfe to forgiue what was past, and taking Valeria by the hande, he deliuered her to Siluanus, promising him for her dowrie 40000. Frankes in golde presently to be paied, and after his decease to remaine for his inheritour.

Siluanus better pleased with Valeria her selfe, then with all the rest that was promised, gaue him great thanks, and so did the Duke his father.

All the companie were replenished with the greatest ioy that might be, to see this sodaine sight and thus they departed to the Pallace where the duke kept his abode, where Siluanus was welcomed, to his mother, to his sister, to Arabianus, and to all the rest, where there was great feasting and triumph, and a bond of euerlasting amitie betweene the houses of the Duke of Mantona, the Duke of Vasconia, and the Duke of Petrona, and after a while they had feasted and sported them selues, they rode altogether in companie to the Emperours Court, who receiued them with so great honour as he could deuise, & making himselfe a partaker of their mirth, wondering to heare the hole discourse how things had happened, when after a while hee had feasted them, and shewed them as greate pleasures as might be deuised, he bestowed of them al large and bountifull giftes, but especially the two yong Ladies Valeria & Phylene, and this agreeing amongest themselues, to mete once a peare at the least to sporte and make them selues merry, for this season they departed, euery one where it liked them best.

Of Apolonius and Silla.

The argument of the second Histerie.

¶ Apolonius *Duke, having spent a yeeres seruice in the warres against the Turke, returning homeward with his companie by sea, was driuen by force of weather to the Ile of* Cypres, *where hee was well receiued by* Pontus *gouernour of the same Ile, with whom* Silla *daughter to* Pontus, *fell so strangely in loue, that after* Apolonius *was departed to Constantinople,* Silla *with one man followed, and comming to Constantinople, she serued* Apolonius, *in the habite of a man, and after many pretie accidents falling out, she was knowne to* Apolonius, *who in requitall of her loue maried her.*

There is no child that is borne into this wretched world, but before it doth suck the mothers milke, it taketh first a soope of the cup of errour, which maketh vs when we come to riper yeeres, not onely to enter into actions of iniury, but many times to stray from that is right and reason, but in all other things, wherin wee shew our selues to bee most drunken with this poysoned cuppe, it is in our actions of loue. for the louer is so estranged from that is right, and wandereth so wide from the bounnes of reason, that hee is not able to deeme white from blacke, good from bad, vertue from vice. but onely leade by the appetite of his owne affections, and grounding them on the foolishnesse of his owne fancies, will so settle his liking on such a one, as either by desert or vnworthinesse, will merite rather to be loathed then loued.

If a question might be asked what is the ground indeede of reasonable loue, whereby the knot is knit, of true and perfect friendshipe I thinke those that be wise would answer Desert, that is, where the partie beloued, doth requite vs with the like, for otherwise, if the bare shew of beauty, or the comelinesse of personage, might be sufficient to confirme vs in our loue. Those that bee accustomed to goe to Fayres and Markets, might sometimes fall into loue with twentie in a day. Desert must then be (of force) the ground of reasonable loue, to loue them that hate vs, to followe them that flie from vs, to fawne

fawne on them that frowne on vs, to enuy fauour with them that disdaine vs, to be glad to please them that care not how they offend vs: who will not confesse this to be an erronious loue, neither grounded vpon wit nor reason. Wherefore right courteous gentlewomen, if it please you with patience to peruse this historie following, you shall see Dame Errour so play her part, with a Leithe of Louers, a male and two females, as shall worke a wonder to your wise iudgement, in noting the effect of their amorous deuises and concaulsions of their actions. The first neglecting the loue of a noble Dame, young, beautifull, and faire, (who onely for his good will, plaied the part of a seruing man, contented to abide any manner of paine onely to behold him. Hee againe setting his loue of a Dame that despising him, (being a noble Duke) gaue her selfe to a seruing man (as she had thought) but it otherwise fell out, as the substance of this tale shall better describe. And because I haue bin something tedious in my first discourse, offending your patient eares, with the hearing of a circumstance ouer long: From henceforth, that which I mind to write, shall be done with such celerity, as the matter that I pretende to pen, may in any wise permit me, and thus followeth the Historie.

During the time that the famous Citty of Constantinople, remained in the handes of the Christians, amongst many other noble men, that kept their abiding in that flourishing Citty, there was one whose name was Apolonius, a worthy Duke, who being but a very yong man, and euen then newe come to his possessions which were very great, leuied a mighty bande of men, at his owne proper charges, with whom hee serued against the Turke, during the space of one whole yeere, in which time although it were very short, this young Duke so behaued himselfe, as well by prowesse and valiance shewed with his owne hands, as otherwise, by his wisdome & liberality, vsed towards his Souldiors, that all the world was filled with the fame of this noble duke. When he had thus spent one yeeres seruice, he caused his Trompet to sound a retrait, and gathering his company together, and imbarking themselues he set saile, holding his course towards Constantinople: but being vpon the Sea, by the extremity of a tempest which sodainely fell, his fleete was seuered some one way, and some an other, but hee himselfe recouered the Ile of Cypres, where he was worthily receiued by Pontus Duke and gouernour of the same Ile, with whom hee lodged, while his

Shippes were new repairing.

This Pontus that was Lord and gouernour of this famous Ile, was an auncient Duke, and had two children, a sonne and a daughter, his son was named Siluio, of whom hereafter we shal haue further occasion to speake, but at this instant he was in the parts of Africa, serving in the warres.

The daughter her name was Silla, whose beauty was so pereles, that she had the soueraignty amongst all other Dames, as well for her beauty as for the noblenesse of her birth. This Silla hauing heard of the worthinesse of Apolonius, this yong Duke, who besides his beauty and good graces, had a certaine natural allurement, that being now in his company in her fathers Court, she was so strangly attached with the loue of Apolonius, that there was nothing might content her but his presence & sweet sight, and although she saw no maner of hope, to attaine to that she most desired: Knowing Apolonius to be but a guest, and ready to take the benefit of the next Wind, and to depart into a straunge countrye, whereby shee was bereaued of all possibility euer to see him againe, and therefore striued with her selfe to leaue her fondnesse, but al in vaine it would not bee, but like the Fowle which is once limed, the more shee striueth, the faster she tyeth her selfe. So Silla was now constrained perforce her will to yeeld to loue, wherefore from time to time, shee vsed so great familiarity with him, as her honour might well permitte, and feede him with such amorous baites, as the modestye of a maide, could reasonably affoorde, which when shee perceiued, did take but small effect, seeing her selfe so much out raged with the extremity of her passion, by the onely countenance that she bestowed vpon Apolonius, it might haue bene well perceiued, that the very eyes pleaded vnto him for pitie and remorse. But Apolonius comming but lately from out the field, from the chasing of his enemies, and his fury not yet throughly defeated, nor purged from his stomacke, gaue no regard to these amorous entisements, which by reason of his youth, he had not bin acquainted withall. But his minde ran more to heare his Pilots, bring newes of a merry wind, to serue his turne to Constantinople, which in the ende came very prosperously: & giuing Duke Pontus hearty thankes for his great entertainement, taking his leaue of himselfe, and the Ladie Silla his daughter, departed with his company, and with a happy gale arriued at his desired porte; Gentlewoman according to my promise, I will here for breuities

uities sake, omit to make repetition of the long and dolourous discourse recorded by Silla, for this sodains departure of her Apolonius, knowing you to be as tenderly hearted as Silla her selfe, whereby you may the better coniecture the furie of her feuer,

But Silla the further that she saw her selfe bereaued of al hope, either any more to see her beloued Apolonius, so much the more contagious were her passions, and made the greater speed to execute that she had premeditated in her minde, which was this: Amongest many seruants that did attend vpon her, there was one whose name was Pedro, who had a long time waited vpon her in her chamber, whereby shee was well assured of his fidelity and trust: to that Pedro, therefore shee bewraied first the feruencie of her loue borne to Apolonius, conturing him in the name of the Gods of Loue her selfe, and binding him by the duety that a Seruant ought to haue, that tendereth his Mistresse safety and good liking, and desiring him with teares trickling downe her cheekes, that hee would giue his consent to aide and assiste her, in that she had determined, which was for that she was fully resolued to goe to Constantinople, where she might againe take the view of her beloued Apolonius, that hee according to the trust she had reposed in him, would not refuse to giue his consent, secretly to conney her from out her fathers Court according as she should giue him direction, and also to make him selfe partaker of her iourney, and to waite vpon her, till she had seen the ende of her determination.

goddess

Pedro perceiuing with what vehemencie his Lady and Mistresse had made request vnto him, albeit hee saw many perilles and doubts, depending in her pretence, notwithstanding, [illegible] his consent to bee at her disposition, promising her to [illegible] her with his best aduice, and to bee ready to obey whatsoeuer shee would please to commaund him. The match beeyng thus agreed vpon, and all things prepared in a readinesse for their departure: It happened there was a Galley of Constantinople, ready to depart, which Pedro vnderstanding came to the Captaine, desiring him to haue passage for himselfe, and for a poore Maide that was his Sister, which were bounde to Constantinople vpon certaine vrgent affaires, to which request, the Captaine graunted, willing him to prepare aboarde with all speed, because the winde serued him presently to depart.

Pedro

Pedro now commyng to his sisters, and tellyng her how he had handeled the matter with the Captaine, she likyng verie well of the deuise, disguisyng her selfe into verie simple atyre, stole away from out her fathers Court, and came with Pedro, whom now she calleth brother aboarde the Gallye, where al things being in readinesse and the wind seruing verie wel, they launched forth with their Oares, and set saile, when they were at the Sea, the Captaine of the Galley taking the vew of Silla, perceiuing her singular beautie, he was better pleased in beholdyng of her face, then in takyng the height either of the Sunne or Starre, and thinking her by the homlinesse of her apparell, to be but some simple maiden, calling her into his Cabin, he beganne to breake with her after the Sea fashion, desiring her to vse his owne Cabin for her better ease: and during the time that she remained at the Sea, she should not want a bed, and then whispering softly in her eare, he saied, that for want of a bedfellow, he himselfe would supply that rome. Silla not being acquainted with any such talke, blushed for shame, but made him no answer at all, my Captaine feeling such bickering within himselfe, the like whereof he had neuer indured vpon the Sea: was like to be taken prisoner aboard his owne Ship, & forced to yeeld himselfe captiue without any cannon shot, wherefore to saue all sores, and thinking it the readiest way to speed, he began to breake with Silla in the way of marriage, telling her how happy a voyage she had made, to fal into the lyking of such a one as himselfe was, who was able to keepe and maintaine her like a Gentlewoman, and for her sake would likewise take her brother into his fellowship, whom he would by some meanes prefer in such sort, that both of them should haue good cause to thinke themselues thrise happy, shee to light of such a husband, and he to light of such a brother. But Silla nothing pleased with these preferments, desired him to cease his talke, for that she did thinke her selfe indeede to be too vnworthy such a one as he was, neither was she minded yet to marry, and therefore desired him to fire his fancie vpon some that were better worthy then her selfe was, and that could better like of his courtesie then she could do, the Captaine seeing himselfe thus refused, being in a great chafe, he said as followeth

Then seeing you make so little accompt of my courtesie, proffered to one that is so far vnworthy of it, from henceforth I will vse the office of my authority, you shall know that I am the Captaine of this Shippe, and haue power to commaund and dispose of things at my

pleasure

pleasure, and seeing you haue so scornfully reiected me to be your loyall husband, I will now take you by force, and vse you at my will, and so long as it shall please me, will keepe you for mine owne store, there shall be no man able to defend you, nor yet to perswade me from that I haue determined. Silla with these words being stroke into a great feare, did thinke it now too late, to rew her rashe attempt, determined rather to dye with her owne hands, then to suffer her selfe to be abused in such sort, therefore she most humbly desired the Captaine so much as he could to saue her credit, and seeing that she must needes be at his will and disposition, that for that present he would depart, and suffer her till night, when in the darke he might take his pleasure, without any maner of suspition to the residue of his companie. The Captaine thinking now the goale to be more then halfe wonne, was contented so farre to satisfie her request, and departed out leauing her alone in his Cabin.

Silla, being alone by her selfe, drue out her knife readie to strike her selfe to the heart, and falling vpon her knees, desired God to receiue her soule, as an acceptable sacrifice for her follies, which she had so wilfully committed, craning pardon for her sinnes, and so forth continuing a long and pitifull reconciliation to God, in the middest whereof there sodainly fell a wonderfull storme, the terrour whereof was such, that there was no man but did thinke the Seas would presently haue swallowed them, the Billowes so sodainly arose with the rage of the winde, that they were all glad to sail to hearing out of water, for otherwise their feeble Gallie had neuer beene able to haue broked the Seas, this storme continued all that day and the next night, and they being driuen to put romer before the winde to keepe the Gallie a head the Billow, were driuen vpon he maine shore, where the Gallie brake all to peeces, there was euery man prouiding to saue his owne life, some gat vpon Hatches, Boordes, and Casks, and were driuen with the waues to and fro, but the greatest number were drowned, amongst the which Pedro was one, but Silla her selfe being in the Cabyn as you haue heard, take holde of a Chest that was the Captaines, the which by the onely prouidence of God brought her safe to the shore, the which when she had recouered, not knowing what was become of Pedro her man, she deemed that both he and all the rest had beene drowned, for that she saw no body vpon the shore but her selfe, wherefore,

when she had a while made great lamentations, complaining her misshappes, wee beganne in the end to comfort her selfe with the hope, that she had to see her Apolonius and found such meanes that she brake open the Chest that brought her to land, wherein shee found good store of coine and sondrie suites of apparell that were the captaines, and now to prevent a number of iniuries, that might bee proffered to a woman that was left in her case, shee determines to leaue her owne apparell, and to sorte her selfe into some of those suites, that being taken for a man, shee might passe through the Countrie in the better safety, and as shee changed her apparell shee thought it likewise conuenient to change her name, wherefore not readily happening of any other, shee called her selfe Siluio, by the name of her owne brother, whom you haue heard spoken of before.

In this maner she trauailed to Constantinople, where she inquired out the Pallace of the Duke Apolonius, and thinking her selfe now to bee both fit and able to play the seruingman, she presented her selfe to the Duke, craning his seruice, the Duke very willing to giue succour vnto strangers, perceiuing him to be a proper smogue young man, gaue him entertainment: Silla thought her selfe nowe more then satisfied for all the casualties that had happened vnto her in her iourney, that shee might at her pleasure take but the view of the Duke Apolonius, and about the rest of his seruantes was verie diligent and attendaunt vpon him, the which the Duke perceiuing, beganne likewise to growe into good liking with the diligence of his man, and therefore made him one of his Chamber, who but Siluio then was most neate about him, in helping of him to make him readie in a morning, in the setting of his ruffes, in the [illegible] of his Chamber, Siluio pleased his maister so wel, that aboue all the rest of his seruantes about him, he had the greatest credit, and the Duke put him most in trust.

At this verie instaunt, there was remeining in the Cittie a noble Dame a widdowe, whose husband was but lately deceased, one of the noblest men that were in the partes of Grecia, who left his Lady and wife large possessions and great liuings. This Ladyes name was called Iulina, who besides the aboundance of her wealth, & the greatnesse of her reuenues, had likewise the soueraignty of all the Dames of Constantinople for her beautie. To this Lady Iulina, Apolonius became an earnest suter, and according to the manner of louers, besides faire wordes, sorrowfull sighes, and pitious countenaunces,

nãces, there must be sending of loving letters, Chaines, Bracelets, Brouches, Ringes, Tablets, Gemmes, Iuels and presents I know not what: So my Duke, who in the time that he remained in the Ile of Cypres, had no skill at all in the arte of Loue, although it were more then half proffered vnto him, was now become a scholler in Loues Schoole, & had alreadie learned his first lesson, that is, to speake pittifully, to looke ruthfully, to promise largely, to serue diligently, and to please carefully: Now he was learning his second lesson, that is to reward liberally, to giue bountifully, to present willingly, and to write louingly. Thus Apolonius was so busied in his new study, that I warrant you there was no man that could chalenge him for playing the truant, he followed his profession with so good a will: And who must bée the messenger to carrie the tokens and loue letters, to the Lady Iulina, but Siluio his man, in him the duke reposed his only cõfidence, to goe betweene him & his Lady.

Now gentlewomen, doe you thinke there could haue bene a greater torment deuised, wherewith to afflict the heart of Silla, then herselfe to be made the instrument to worke her owne mishap, and to plaie the Attorney in a cause, that made so much against herselfe. But Silla altogether desirous to please her maister, cared nothing at all to offend her selfe, followed his businesse with so good a will as if it had bẽn in her own preferment.

Iulina nowe hauing many times, taken the gaze of this yong youth Siluio, perceiuyng him to bée of such excellent perfect grace, was so intangeled with the often sight of this sweete temptation, that she fell into as great a liking with the man, as the maister was with her seruice: And on a time Siluio beyng sent from his maister, with a message to the Lady Iulina, as he beganne very earnestly to solicite in his maisters behalfe, Iulina interrupting him in his tale, saied: Siluio it is enough that you haue saied for your maister, from henceforth either speake for your self, or say nothing at all. Silla abashed to heare these words, begã in her mind to accuse the blindnes of loue, that Iulina neglecting the god of so noble a duke, would preferre her loue vnto such a one, as nature it selfe had denied to recõpence her liking.

And now for a time, leauing matters depending as you haue heard, it fell out that the right Siluio indéede (whom you haue heard spoken of before, the brother of Silla,) was come to his fathers court into ẏ Ile of Cypres, where vnderstãding, that his sister was

departed, in maner as you haue heard coniectured, that the very occasion did proceede of some liking had betweene Pedro her man (that was missing with her) and her selfe, but Siluio who loued his sister, as dearly as his owne life, and the rather for that as she was his naturall sister, both by Father and Mother, so the one of them was so like the other, in countenance and fauour, that there was no man able to descerne the one from the other by their faces, sauing by their apparell, the one being a man, the other a woman.

Siluio therefore vowed to his Father, not onely to seeke out his sister Silla, but also to reuenge the villanie, which he conceiued in Pedro, for the carrying away of his sister, and thus departing, hauing trauailed through many Cities and Townes, without hearing any maner of newes, of those he went to seeke for, at the last he arriued at Constantinople, where as he was walking in an euening for his owne recreation, on a pleasant greene yarde, without the walles of the Citie, he fortuned to meete with the Lady Iulina, who likewise had been abroad to take the aire, and as she sodainly cast her eyes vpon Siluio, thinking him to be her olde acquaintance, by reason they were so like one another, as you haue heard before, said vnto him, sir Siluio, if your hast be not the greater, I pray you let me haue a little talke with you, seeing I haue so luckely met you in this place.

Siluio wondering to heare himselfe so rightly named, being but a stranger, not of aboue two dayes continuance in the Citie, very courteously came towards her, desirous to heare what she would say.

Iulina commanding her traine something to stand back, sayd as followeth. Seeing my good will and friendly loue, hath beene the onely cause to make me so prodigall to offer, that I see is so lightly reiected, it maketh me to thinke, that men be of this condition, rather to desire those things, which they cannot come by, then to esteeme or value of that, which both largely and liberallie is offered vnto them, but if the liberalitie of my proffer, hath made to seeme lesse the value of the thing that I meant to present, it is but in your owne conceipt, considering how many Noble men there hath beene here before, and be yet at this present, which hath both serued, sued, and most humbly intreated, to attaine to that, which to you of my selfe, I haue freely offered, and I perceiue is despised, or at the least very lightly regarded.

Siluio

Siluio wondering at these wordes, but more amazed that shee could so rightly call him by his name, could not tell what to make of her speeches, assuring himselfe that shee was deceiued, and did mistake him, did thinke notwithstanding, it had bene a point of great simplicity, if he should forsake that, which Fortune had so fauourably proffered vnto him, perceiuing by her traine, that she was some Lady of great honour, and viewing the perfection of her beauty, and the excellency of her grace and countenance, did thinke it vnpossible that she should be despised, and therefore aunswered thus.

Madame, if before this time, I haue seemed to forget my selfe, in neglecting your courtesie, which so liberally you haue meant vnto me: please it you to pardon what is past, & from this day forewardes, Siluio remaineth ready prest to make such reasonable amendes, as his ability may any waies permit, or as it shall please you to commaund.

Iulina the gladdest woman that might bee, to heare these ioyfull newes, said: Then my Siluio see you faile not to morrow at night to sup with me at my owne house, where I will discourse farther with you, what amends you shall make me, to which request Siluio gaue his glad consent, and thus they departed very well pleased. And as Iulina did thinke the time very long, till she had reapt the fruite of her desire: So Siluio he wisht for Haruest, before corne could growe, thinking the time as long, till hee saw how matters would fall out, but not knowing what Lady she might bee, he presently (before Iulina was out of sight) demaunded of one that was walking by, what shee was, and how she was called, who satisfied Siluio in euery point, and also in what part of the towne her house did stand, whereby hee might inquire it out.

Siluio thus departing to his lodging, passed the night with verie vnquiet sleepes, and the next Morning his mind ran so much of his Supper, that he neuer cared, neither for his Breakefast, nor Dinner, and the day to his seeming passed away so slowely, that hee had thought the stately Steedes had bin tired, that drawe the Chariot of the Sunne, [illegible] against [illegible], and wished that Phaeton had beene there with a whippe.

Iulina on the other side, she had thought the Clockesetter had plaied the knaue, the day came no faster forewards, but sire a clocke being once stricken, recouered comfort to both parties: ¶ Siluio hastening

ning himselfe to the Pallace of Iulina, where by her he was friendly welcomed, and a sumptuous supper being made readie, furnished with sundrie sorts of delicate dishes, they sate them downe, passing the Supper time with amorous lookes, loving countenances, and secret glaunces conueighed from the one to the other, which did better satisfie them, then the feeding of their daintie dishes.

Supper time being thus spent, Iulina did thinke it very vnfitly, if she should turne Siluio to go seeke his lodging in an euening, desired him therefore, that he would take a bed in her house for that Night, and bringing him vp into a faire Chamber, that was very richly furnished, she found such meanes, that when all the rest of her houshold seruants were a bed and quiet, she came her selfe to beare Siluio companie, where concluding vpon conditions, that were in question betweene them, they passed the night with such ioy and contentation, as might in that conuenient time be wished for, but onely that Iulina, feeding too much of some one dish aboue the rest, receiued a surfet, whereof she could not be cured in fortie weekes after, a naturall inclination in all women which are subiect to longing, and want the reason to vse a moderation in their diet: but the morning approaching, Iulina tooke her leaue, and conueighed her selfe into her owne chamber, and when it was faire day light, Siluano making himselfe readie, departed likewise about his affaires in the towne, debating with himselfe how things had happened, being well assured that Iulina had mistaken him, and therefore for feare of further euils, determined to come no more there, but tooke his iourney towards other places in the parts of Grecia, to see if he could learne any tidings of his sister Silla.

The duke Apolonius hauing made a long sute and neuer a whit the neerer of his purpose, came to Iulina to craue her direct answer, either to accept of him, and of such conditions as he proffered vnto her, or els to giue him his last farewell.

Iulina, as you haue heard, had taken an earnest pennie of an other, whom he had thought had beene Siluio the Dukes man, was at a [illegible] while she thought, seeing her [illegible] so fit, to craue the Duke [illegible] for the marrying of his man, then againe, she could not [illegible] sure the Duke would conceiue, in that she should seeme to preferre his man before himselfe, did thinke it therefore best to conceale the matter, till she might speake with Siluio, to wit his opinion how

these

these matters should be handled, and hereupon resoluing her selfe, desiring the Duke to pardon her shrewdes, said as followeth.

Sir Duke, for that from this time forwardes I am no longer of my selfe, hauing giuen my full power and authority ouer to another, whose wife I now remaine by faithfull bowe and promise: And albeit, I knowe the world will wounder, when they shall vnderstand the fondnesse of my choise, yet I trust you your selfe will nothing dislike with me, sith I haue meant no other thing, then the satisfying of mine owne contentation and liking.

The Duke hearing these wordes, answered: Madam, I must then content my selfe, although against my will, hauing the lawe in your owne hands, to like of whom you list, and to make choise where it pleaseth you.

Iulina giuing the duke great thankes, that would content himselfe with such pacience, desired him likewise, to giue his free consent & good will, to the partie whom she had chosen to be her husband.

Nay surely madam quoth the Duke) I will neuer giue my consent, that any other man shall enioy you then my selfe, I haue made too great accompt of you, then so lightly to passe you away with my good will: But seeing it lieth not in me to let you, hauing (as you say) made your owne choise, so from hence forwardes I leaue you to your owne liking, alwaies willing you well, and thus will take my leaue.

The Duke departed towards his owne house very sorrowfull, that Iulina had thus serued him, but in the meane space that the duke had remained in the house of Iulina, some of his seruantes fell into talke and conference, with the seruantes of Iulina, where debating betweene them, of the likelihood of the marriage, betweene the duke and the Ladie, one of the seruants of Iulina said: that he neuer sawe his Lady and Mistresse, vse so good countenance to the Duke himselfe, as shee had done to Siluio his man, and beganne to report with what familiarity and courtesie, she had receiued him, feasted him, & lodged him, and that in his opinion, Siluio was like to speede before the duke or any other that were suters.

This tale was quickly brought to the duke himself, who making better inquiry in the matter, found it to bee true that was reported, and better considering of the wordes, which Iulina had vsed towardes himselfe, was very well assured that it could be no other then his owne man, that had thrust his Nose so far out of ioynt, wherefore

without

without any further respect, caused him to bee thrust into a Dungeon, where he was kept prisoner, in a verie pitifull plight.

Poore Siluio, hauing got intelligence by some of his fellowes, what was the cause that the Duke his Maister did beare such displeasure vnto him, deuised all the meanes he could, as well by meditation by his fellowes, as otherwise by petitions, and supplications to the Duke, that he would suspend his Judgement, till perfect proofe were had in the matter, and then if any manner of thing did fall out against him, wherby the Duke had cause to take any greefe, he would confesse himselfe worthy not onely of imprisonment, but also of most vile and shamefull death: with these petitions he daiely plied the Duke, but all in vaine, for the Duke thought hee had made so good proofe, that he was throughlie confirmed in his opinion against his man.

But the Ladie Iúlina, wondering what made Siluio, that he was so slacke in his visitation, and why hee absented himselfe so long from her presence, began to thinke that all was not well, but in the end, perceiuing no decoction of her former surfet, receiued as you haue heard, and finding in her selfe, an vnmounted swelling in her bellie, assuring her selfe to bee with child, fearing to become quite banckrout of her honour, did thinke it more then time to seeke out a Father, and made such secret search, and diligent enquirie, that shee learned the truth how Siluio, was kepte in prison, by the Duke his Maister, and minding to find a present remedie, as well for the loue she bare to Siluio, as for the maintainaunce of her credit & estimation, she speedily hasted to the Pallace of the duke, to whom she saied as followeth.

Sir Duke, it may be that you will thinke my comming to your house in this sorte, doeth something passe the limites of modestie, the which I protest before GOD, proceedeth of this desire, that the worlde should know, how iustly I seeke meanes to maintaine my honour, but to the end I seeme not tedious with prolixitie of woords, nor to vse other then direct circumstaunces, knowe sir, that the loue I beare to my onely beloued Siluio, whom I doe esteeme more then all the Jewelles in the world, whose personage I regard more then my owne life, is the onely cause of my attempted iourney, beseeching you, that all the whole displeasure, which I vnderstand you haue conceiued against him, may be imputed vnto my charge, and that it would please you louingly to deale with him, whom of

my

of my selfe I haue chosen rather for the satisfaction of mine honest liking, then for the vaine preheminences or honourable dignities looked after by ambitious mindes.

The Duke hauing heard this discourse, caused Siluio presently to be sent for, and to be brought before him, to whom he sated: Had it not been sufficient for thee, when I had reposed my selfe in thy fidelitie, and the trustinesse of thy seruice, that thou shouldest so traiterously deale with me, but since that time hast not spared, still to abuse me with so many forgeries, and periured protestations, not onely hatefull vnto me, whose simplicitie thou thinkest to be such that by the plotte of thy pleasant tongue, thou wouldest make mée beleeue a manifest vntroth, but most abominable be thy doings in the presence and sight of God, that hast not spared to blaspheme his holy name, by calling him to bée a witnesse to maintaine thy leasinges, and so detestably wouldest forsweare thy selfe, in a matter that is so openly knowne.

Poore Siluio whose innocencie was such, that he might lawfully sweare seeing Iulina to be there in place, aunswered thus.

Most noble Duke, well vnderstanding your conceiued greefe, most humbly I beseech you patiently to beare my excuse, not minding thereby to aggrauate or heape vp your wrath and displeasure, protesting before God, that there is nothing in the world, which I regarde so much, or doe estéeme so deare, as your good grace and fauour, but desirous that your grace should know my innocencie, and to cleare my selfe of such impositions, wherewith I knowe I am wrongfully accused, which as I vnderstand should be in the practising of the Lady Iulina, who standeth here in place, whose acquitaunce for my better discharge, now I most humbly craue, protesting before the almightie God, that neither in thought, word, nor deede, I haue not otherwise vsed my selfe, then according to the bonde and duetie of a seruant, that is both willing & desirous, to further his Maisters suites, which if I haue otherwise sayed then that is true, you Madame Iulina, who can derie wel decide the depthes of al this doubt, I most humbly beseech you to certifie a troth, if I haue in any thing missaied, or haue otherwise spoken then is right & iust.

Iulina hauing heard this discourse which Siluio had made, perceiuing that he stood in great awe of the Dukes displeasure, aunswered thus: Thinke not my Siluio, that my comming hither is to accuse you of any misdemeanour towardes your Maister,

so I doe not denay, but in all such Imbassages wherein towardes me you haue bẽ imployed, you haue vsed the office of a faithfull and truelie messenger, neither am I ashamed to confesse, that the first daie that mine eyes did behold, the singular behauiour, the notable curtesie, and other innumerable giftes wherwith my Siluio is endued, but that beyond all measure my heart was so inflamed, that impossible it was for me, to quench the feruent loue, or extinguish the least part of my conceiued torment, before I had bewraied the same vnto him, and of my owne motion, craued his promised faith and loialty of marriage, and now is the time to manifest the same vnto the world, which hath bẽ done before God, and betweene our selues: knowing that it is not needfull, to kepe secret that, which is neither euill done, nor hurtful to any persone, therefore (as I saied before) Siluio is my husband by plighted faith, who I hope to obtaine without offence, or displeasure of any one, trusting that there is no man, that will so farre forget himselfe, as to restraine that, which God hath left at libertie for euery wight, or that will seeke by cruelltie, to force Ladyes to marrie otherwise, then accordyng to their owne likyng. Feare not then my Siluio to kepe your faith and promise, which you haue made vnto me, and as for the rest: I doubt not thinges will so fall out, as you shall haue no maner of cause to complaine.

Siluio amased to heare these wordes, for that Iulina by her speech, seemed to confirme that, which he most of all desired to be quite of, saied: Who would haue thought that a Ladie of so great honour and reputation, would her selfe bee the Embassadour, of a thing so preiuditiall, and vncomely for her estate, what plighted promises be these which be spoken of: Altogether ignorant vnto me, which if it be otherwise then I haue saied, you Sacred Gods consume me straight with flashing flames of fire. But what wordes might I vse to giue credit to the truth, and innocencie of my cause? Ah Madame Iulina I desire no other testimonie, then your owne honestye & vertue, thinking that you will not so much blemish the brightnesse of your honour, knowing that a woman is or should be, the Image of curtesie, continencie, and shamefastnesse, from the which so soone as she swerueth, and leaueth the office of her duetie & modesty, besides the degradation of her honour, she thrusteth her selfe into the pit of perpetual infamy, & as I can not think you would so farre forget your selfe, by the reuolt of a noble Duke, to diuine the light

of

of your renolone and glorie, which hetherto you haue maintained, amongest the best and noblest Ladies, by such a one as I knowe my selfe to be, to farre vnworthie your degree and callyng, so most humbly I beseech you to confesse a troth, whereto tendeth those vowes and promises you speake of, which speeches bee so obscure vnto me, as I know not for my life howe I might vnderstand them.

Iulina something nipped with these speeches saied, and what is the matter that now you make so little accompt of your Iulina, that beeing my husband indeed, haue the face to denie me, to whom thou art contracted by so many solemne othes: what art thou ashamed to haue me to thy wife? how much oughtest thou rather to be ashamed to breake thy promised faith, and to haue despised the holie and dreadfull name of GOD, but that time constraineth me to lay open that, which shame rather willeth I should dissemble and keepe secret, behold me then here Siluio whom thou hast gotten with Childe, who if thou bee of such honestie, as I trust for all this I shall finde, then the thing is done without prejudice, or any hurt to my conscience, considerying that by the professed faith, thou didest accompt mee for thy wife, and I receiued thee for my spouse and loyall husband, swearyng by the almightie God, that no other then you haue made the conquest and triumph of my chastitie, whereof I craue no other witnesse then your selfe, & mine owne conscience.

I praie you Gentlewomen, was not this a foule ouersight of Iulina, that would so precisely sweare so great an oth, that she was gotten with child by one, that was altogether vnfurnisht with implementes for such a tourne. For Gods loue take heede, and let this be an example to you, when you be with child, how you sweare who is the Father, before you haue had good proofe and knowledge of the partie, for men be so subtill and full of sleight, that God knoweth a woman may quickly be deceiued.

But now to returne to our Siluio, who hearing an othe sworne so diuinely that if had gotten a woman with child, was like to believe that it had bin true in very deede, but remembryng his owne impediment, thought it impossible that he should committe such an act, and therfore halfe in a chafe, bee saied. What lawe is able to restraine the foolish indiscretion of a woman, that yeeldeth herselfe to her owne desires, what shame is able to bridle or withdrawe

her from her mind and madneſſe, or with what ſnaffell is it poſſible to holde her back, from the execution of her filthineſſe, but what abhomination is this, that a Lady of ſuch a houſe ſhould ſo forget the greatneſſe of her eſtate, the alliaunce whereof ſhe is deſcended, the nobility of her deceaſed huſband, & maketh no conſcience to ſhame and ſlaunder her ſelfe, with ſuch a one as I am, beeing ſo far vnfit & vnſeemely for her degree, but how horrible is it to heare the name of God ſo defaced, that we make no more account, but for the maintainance of our miſchiefs, we feare no whit at all to forſweare his holy name, as though he were not in all his dealings moſt righteous, true and iuſt, and will not onely lay open our leaſings to the worlde, but will likewiſe punith the ſame with moſt ſharpe and bitter ſcourges.

Iulina, not able to indure him to proceede any farther in his Sermon, was already ſurpriſed with a vehement griefe, began bitterly to cry out vttering theſe ſpeeches following.

Alas, is it poſſible that the ſoueraigne iuſtice of God, can abide a miſchiefe ſo great & curſed, why may I not now ſuffer death, rather then the infamy which I ſee to wander before mine eies. Oh happy and more then right happy had I bin, if inconſtant fortune had not deuiſed this treaſon where in I am ſurpriſed and caught, am I thus become to be intangled with ſnares, and in the handes of him, who inioying the ſpoiles of my honour, will openly depriue mee of my fame, by making mee a common fable to all poſterity in time to come, ah Traitour and diſcourteous wretch, is this the recompence of the honeſt and firme amity which I haue borne thée, wherein haue I deſerued this diſcourteſſe, by louing thée more then thou art able to deſerue, is it I, arrant theefe is it I, vpon whom thou thinkeſt to worke thy miſchiefes, doeſt thou thinke me no better worth, but that thou maieſt prodigally waſt my honour at thy pleaſure, diddeſt thou dare to aduenture vpon me hauing thy conſcience wounded with ſo deadly a treaſon: ah vnhappy and aboue all other moſt vnhappy, that haue ſo charely preſerued mine honour, and now am made a prey to ſatiſfie a yong mans luſt, that hath coueted nothing but the ſpoile of my chaſtity and good name.

Herewithall the teares ſo guſhed downe her chéekes, that ſhe was not able to open her mouth to vſe any further ſpeech.

The Duke who ſtoode by all this while, and heard this whole diſcourſe, was wonderfully moued with compaſſiō towards Iulina, knowing

knowing that from her infancie she had euer so honourably vsed her selfe, that there was no man able to detect her of any misdemeanour, otherwise then beseemed a Lady of her estate, wherefore being fully resolued that Siluio his man had committed this villanie against her, in a great furie drawing his Rapier, he said vnto Siluio.

How canst thou (arrant theefe) shew thy selfe so cruell and careless to such as doe thée honour, hast thou so little regard of such a noble Lady, as humbleth her selfe to such a villaine as thou art, who without any respect either of her renowne or noble estate, canst be content to seeke the wracke and vtter ruine of her honour, but frame thy selfe to make such satisfaction as she requireth, although I know vnworthy wretch, that thou art not able to make her the least part of amends, or I sweare by God, that thou shalt not escape the death which I will minister to thée with mine owne hands, and therefore aduise thée well what thou dooest.

Siluio hauing heard this sharpe sentence, fell downe on his knées before the Duke craning for mercie, desiring that he might be suffered to speake with the Lady Iulina apart, promising to satisfie her according to her owne contentation.

Well (quoth the Duke) I take thy worde, and there withall I aduise thée that thou performe thy promise, or otherwise I protest before God, I will make thée such an example to the world, that all Traitours shall tremble for feare, how they doe seeke the dishonouring of Ladies.

But now Iulina had conceiued so great griefe against Siluio, that there was much adoe, to perswade her to talke with him, but remembring her owne case, desirous to heare what excuse he could make, in the end she agréed, and being brought into a place seuerallie by themselues, Siluio began with a pitious voyce to say as followeth.

I know not Madam, of whom I might make complaint, whether of you or of my selfe, or rather of Fortune, which hath conducted and brought vs both into so great aduersitie, I sée that you receiue great wrong, and I am condemned against all right, you in perill to abide the braite of spightfull tongues, and I in danger to lose the thing that I most desire: and although I could alledge many reasons to proue my sayings true, yet I referre my selfe, to the experience and bountie of your minde. And here with all lifting his garments downe to his stomacke, and shewed Iulina his

breastes and pretty teates, surmounting farre the whitenesse of snow it selfe, saying: Loe Madam, beholde here the party whom you have chalenged to be the father of your childe, see I am a woman the daughter of a noble Duke, who onely for the loue of him, whom you so lightly have shaken of, have forsaken my father, abandoned my countrey, and in manner as you see am become a seruing man, satisfying my selfe, but with the onely sight of my Apolonius, and now Madam, if my passion were not behement, and my torments without comparison, I would wish that my fained griefes might be laughed to scorne, and my dissembled paines to bee rewarded with floutes. But my loue being pure, my trauaile continuall, and my griefes endelesse, I trust Madam you will not only excuse me of crime, but also pitty my distresse, the which I protest I would still have kept secret, if my fortune would so have permitted.

Iulina, did now thinke her selfe to be in a worse case then euer she was before, for now she knew not whom to challenge to be the Father of her child, wherefore, when she had told the Duke the verye certainty of the discourse, which Silvio had made vnto her, shee departed to her owne house, with such griefe and sorrowe, that she purposed neuer to come out of her owne doores againe alive, to be a wonder and mocking stocke to the world.

But the Duke more amazed, to heare this straunge discourse of Silvio came vnto him, whom when he had viewed with better consideration, perceiued in deede that it was Silla the daughter of duke Pontus, and imbracing her in his armes, he said.

Oh the branche of al vertue, and the flowre of courtesie it selfe, pardon me I beseech you of all such discourtesies, as I have ignorantly committed towards you: desiring you that without farther memorie of auncient griefes, you will accept of me, who is more ioyfull and better contented with your presence, then if the whole world were at my commaundement. Where hath there euer bin founde such liberality in a louer, which having beene trained vp and nourished amongest the delicacies and banquets of the Court, accompanied with traines of many fayre and noble Ladies living in pleasure, and in the middest of delights, would so prodigally aduenture your selfe, neither fearing mishaps, nor misliking to take such paines, as I knowe you have not bin accustomed vnto. O liberality neuer heard of before! O fact that can neuer be sufficiently rewarded! O true Loue most pure and vnfained: here with all sending for the

most

moſt artificiall workemen, he prouided for her ſondry ſuites of ſumptuous apparell and the Marriage day appointed, which was celebrated with great triumph through the whole Citty of Conſtantinople, euery one praiſing the nobleneſſe of the Duke, but ſo many as did behold the excellent beauty of Silla, gaue her the praiſe aboue all the reſt of the Ladies in the troupe.

The matter ſeemed ſo wonderfull and ſtraunge, that the bruite was ſpread throughout al the parts of Grecia, in ſo much that it came to the hearing of Siluio, who as you haue heard remained in thoſe parts to enquire of his ſiſter, he being the gladdeſt man in the world, haſted to Conſtantinople, where comming to his ſiſter he was ioyfully receiued, and moſt louingly welcomed, and intertained of the Duke, his brother in law. After he had remained there two or three dates, the Duke reuealed vnto Siluio, the whole diſcourſe how it happened, betweene his ſiſter and the Lady Iulina, and how his ſiſter was chalenged, for getting a woman with child: Siluio bluſhing with theſe wordes, was ſtriken with great remorſe to make Iulina amends, vnderſtanding her to bee a noble Lady, and was left defamed to the world through his default, hee thereforе bewaied the whole circumſtance to the Duke, whereof the Duke being very ioyfull, immediately repaired with Siluio to the houſe of Iulina, who they found in her chamber, in great lamentation and mourning. To whom the Duke ſaide, take courage Madam for behold here a Gentleman, that wil not ſticke, both to father your child and to take you for his wife, no inferiour perſon, but the ſonne and heyre of a noble Duke, worthy of your eſtate and dignity.

Iulina ſeeing Siluio in place, did know very well that he was the father of her childe, and was ſo rauiſhed with ioy, that ſhe knew not whether ſhe were awake, or in ſome dreame. Siluio imbracing her in his armes, craning forgiueneſſe of all that was paſt: concluded with her the marriage day, which was preſently accompliſhed with great ioy and contentation to all parties: And thus Siluio hauing attained a noble wife, and Silla his ſiſter her deſired husband, they paſſed the reſtone of their dates with ſuch delight, as thoſe that haue accompliſhed the perfections of their felicities.

FINIS.

The

Of Nicander and Lucilla.

The argument of the third Hiſtorie.

¶ Lucilla, *a yong maiden indued with ſingular beauty, for want of a conuenient dowrie, was reſtrained from marrying her beloued* Nicander, *in the end, through the great magnificence of the courteous yong prince* Don Hercules, *the onely ſonne and heire of* Alfonſo *Duke of Farrara, ſhe was releeued with the ſum of* 2000. *crownes, the which money beeing receiued by the Father of* Nicander, *the marriage was performed, to the great contentation of the noble yong Prince, but eſpecially to the two yong Louers* Nicander *and* Lucilla.

IN the time that Alfonſo firſt of that name, and third duke of Ferrara gouerned the State, there was in the city of Ferrara, a gentle young Gentlewomã named Lucilla, borne of a noble family, but by the frowardneſſe of blinde Fortune, reduced to greater pouerty, then her vertues did deſerue: whoſe beauty appeared to be ſuch, in the prime and flower of her yeares, as it filled with maruaile, all thoſe that caſt their eyes vpon her. Of this Gentlewoman was frequently enamored, a gallant yong Gentleman, whoſe name was Nicander, and in like ſort borne of noble blood: and deſired nothing more, then to bee ioyned with her in Patrimonie, But ſhe beeing as it is ſaid poore, though of noble parentage, and endued with ſingular vertues: The father of the yong gentleman diſdained her, who (as for the moſt part, wee ſee old men, naturally enclined to couetiſe) regarding rather the wealth that their daughters in law, are to bring into their families, then either birth, vertue or gifts of the minde, could in no wiſe bee perſwaded, or intreated to content his ſonne in that behalfe, and to ſuffer him to inioye his Loue, by taking her to wife: alledging that the firſt thing that was to be conſidered in marriage was the dowrie, and the woman, for that the vertues of the women do not enrich the houſes wherein they came (ſaid hee) but the quality of goods and wealth, that they brought with them.

The couetous diſpoſition of the Father of Nicander, was cauſe that

that these two yong folke languished in miserable loue: For although their flames were of equall force and heate, yet the young Gentlewoman being of a very honest mind, nor the young Gentleman, neuer thinking vpon any other meanes then honestly to enioy his desire, without touch or breach of her honour: and the obstinate wilfulnesse of the old man being cast as a barre or blocke, betweene the vnity and concord of their two mindes: they liued in great torment, each consuming, and as it were melting away with desire, for loue of each other. Whilest their mutuall loue continued in this sort each day with lesse hope then other, through the obstinacie of the old churle, it happened that Don Hercules the Dukes only Son and heire, being then in the freshest time of his youth, passing by the streete where this gentlewoman dwelt, saw her standing in her doore, apparelled in white, which kind of attire encreased greatly her naturall beauty. And considering somewhat curiously, the comelinesse and excellency of her personage, together with her perfection of beauty, he receiued with such force into his imagination, the first impression of them both, that from thence forward her liuely Image seemed continually to be before his eyes: by the consideration whereof he grew by degrees, to conceiue so vehement a desire, to enioy the singularity which he saw in her, that he thought it impossible for him to liue, if he did not attaine it.

And oft times discoursing to himselfe thereof, he would say, what iniury hath Fortune done vnto this faire gentlewoman, that as nature hath been liberall, in bestowing of beauty vpon her, meete for any great Princes, shee hath not likewise caused her to bee borne of some King or mighty Prince: which if shee were, I would neuer cease till I had found the meanes to get her to bee my wife, and to enioy her as mine owne, with the safety of her honour, and with the satisfaction and contentment of my Father.

But in the ende although he saw her degree to be farre vnequal to his, to wish, or to procure any such match: Yet ceased he not by all the meanes he could, to winne her good will, and now by one deuise, and now by an other to induce her to loue him, and to yeeld to his feruent desire. But all in vaine. For where many others would haue taken it for a great good fortune, that such a Prince shold haue fallen in loue with them, Lucilla considering the baseneſſe of her degree, in respect of the high estate of her new Louer, reputed it to bee a great mishappe vnto her, as she that considered, that shee could

not nourish or entertaine any such loue, but with the harme and preiudice of your honour. Besides that, she feared least that Nicander should once perceiue, that this yong Prince hunted after that haunt, he would forsake her, for feare of further displeasure, wherefore to auoid both inconueniences, whereas till then, she was wont to shew her selfe sometime at the Doore, sometime at the Windowes, she now retired her selfe in such sort, that she could neuer be seen but on the Sondaies and Holidaies, as she went to a little church nere adioyning to the house. Wherefore Nicander not a little mauailing, and greatly troubled in spirit, fearing that Lucilla (wauering as women vse to doe) had forsaken him, and turned her affection els where: as one full of iealousie and griefe, for fault of better comfort he would watch his times, and followe her to that Church: there to feede his fancie with a looke or two, which yet amid his misery, bee seemed to esteeme as a reliefe, without the which he could not liue. Finally, not beyng able to endure those torments, that this absence and strangenesse of his Lady caused him to feele, he sent vnto her a conuenient messenger with a Letter, containing this effect

The Bird which long hath liued in pleasant field,
Esteemes no whit his cage of wreathed gold:
The dulced note, wherewith he pearst the Skie,
For griefe of mind, hee cannot them vnfold:
Yet liues he still but better were to die,
More worse then death, euen such a life haue I.

The Turtle true of his deceased mate,
Bewailes the want, he reakes no more of blisse:
The swelling Swanne, doth hardly brooke the place,
When he his best beloued bird doth misse.
Such is my ioy Nicander *needes must die,*
Lucilla *doth his wonted presence flie.*

How can I liue, that double death possesse.
How should I ioy, that drenched am in thrall:
What foode may feed or beare a pleasant taste,
Whereas the heart, lies bathed still in Gall,
If this be life, then life be far from me,
And welcome death to ease Nicander *free.*

What cauſe my deare, hath thy Nicander *wrought,*
That makes thee ſhunne, in whom thou ſhouldſt delight.
What moones thy mind, to mewe thee vp ſo cloſe,
And keepe thee from, thy beſt beloued ſight,
If I offended haue, then charge me when and how,
Nicander *ſhall him cleare, or to thy mercie bowe.*

If no offence, but fonde conceipt hath taken holde,
condemne him not, that ſhewes his giltleſſe hand:
Who hetherto, hath neuer meant the thing,
That iuſtly might, againſt your honour ſtand.
If guilty I, I aske no other grace,
Giue dome of death, and doe my ſute deface.

I ſay no more, but as I do deſerue,
So ſhewe the fruite of my deſerued hire:
Seeme not ſo ſtrange, vnto thy faithfull friend,
Whoſe abſence ſets, my ſchorching heart on fire.
But as my loue, to thee no tounge can tell,
Eſteeme the like of me, and ſo farewell.

Thine owne Nicander.

The yong gentlewoman who had fixed al her thoughts, and ſetled all the contentments of her heart, onely vpon Nicander, neither deſiring any thing in the world, ſo much as to pleaſe and content him: felt an intollerable perplexity of mind, in that ſhe ſaw him grieue thus, at her late ſtrangeneſſe, yet thought it better that he ſhould complaine, then come by any knowledge of the loue, that Don Hercules did beare her, wherefore hiding from him the matter, replied in this ſort.

The bird which is reſtraind,
Of former hearts delight:
I muſt confeſſe, twixt life and death
Doth alwaie combate fight.

So doth the heart compelled,
By hoſte of parents will:
Obey for feare, yet force by loue,
Continues conſtant ſtill.

No absence by consent,
My deare Nicander *I:*
Haue wrought to worke thy woe from thee,
Like Cressed *false to flie.*

Ne shall I liue to loth,
What may content thy minde:
Hap life or death, as true as steele,
Thou shalt Lucilla *finde.*

Thy eares shall neuer heare.
No eyes shall neuer see:
That any wight shall reape the fruite,
Which planted was for thee.

Then frame thy selfe my deare,
To take against thy will:
Our absence in good part till time.
May better happe fulfill.

And therewithall receiue,
This pledge to cure thy paine:
My heart is thine, preserue it well,
Till we two meete againe.

Euer thine Lucilla.

This sweete answer, mitigated not a little the mode of the young Gentleman, and so he framed himselfe the best he could to tollerate the absence of his Lucilla. On the other side Don Hercules, who in like maner found himselfe depriued of the sight of that young Ladie, whom he loued extreamly, was very much discontented, & perceiuing that neither messages, nor faire offers, with large gifts sent vnto her, wherof neuer any were accepted could once mooue her to shew her self courteous vnto him, of so much as a looke, & considering the powertie wherin her mother liued now in her latter yeare, began to imagine that it would be much easier for him by offring her liberally wherewithall to marry her daughter, to perswade her to yelde her into his handes, then to win the yong gentlewomā to his desires.

Where-

Wherefore hauing sent a fit person to Lucillas mother, to let her vnderstand, that if she would be content, that the young Prince might enioy her daughter, he would giue her such a dowrie in recompence of his pleasure, that no Gentleman of what degrée soeuer, should for her pouertie refuse to take her to wife: whereas if she refused that good offer, she should thereby be constrained through necessitie, either to bestow her vpon some Artificer or crafts man, or if she would néeds marrie her to a gentleman, she must giue her to some such as was so poore, as that she should liue all the dayes of her life in want and miserie. The which in effect would be nothing els, but to be cruell towards her owne daughter, in barring that good hap which he did offer, besides the fauour that he should be able to shew, in furthering her mariage, to both their endlesse comforts. The mother being often solicited & sommoned to this effect: & on the one side punished with pouertie, & on the other charged with yeares, both which pressed her very much, after diuerse discourses made to and fro with her selfe, lastly she said. And whereto ought I to haue regarde, but to the wealth and profit of my daughter, which both she shall reape abundantly, if by the giuing her selfe vnto this young Prince, he doth bestow vpon her that dowrie, which he hath promised. And although in doing thereof, there be some touch and spot to my daughters honour and mine, yet shall it be so recompensed with the benefit of her dowrie, that the profit will be greater then the harme. And if therein be any offence, the blame thereof is not to be imputed vnto me, but vnto my euill fortune, that hath brought me into this miserable necessitie. Besides that my daughter being now already eighténe yéeres of age, and of most singular beautie, and my selfe already so old, that from day to day, I may looke to go to my graue, I might happen to dye, and leaue her without any gouernment, or ouersight, and she stirred with these appetites, whereto young folkes are enclined, through the frailtie of her sexe, and the pouerty wherein I shall leaue her, be brought to yéeld her selfe into the hands of some such one, as would not haue due regard vnto her calling, but bring her vnto the spoile. And after these and such like discourses, sundry times had with her selfe: finally, she sent him word, that if it would please him, she would gladly speake with him her selfe: which he hauing vnderstood, caused her to be brought one euening into a place where they two alone might talke, & there hauing giuen her opportunity to say what she would, thus she bega-

Sir, the weapons wherewith necessitie, and my pouertie hath assaulted me, haue béene so sharpe and so piercing, that although I haue endeuoured all the wayes I could deuise, to resist and defend my selfe from them, yet in the end I haue béene forced to yéeld, as vanquished and ouercome, & constrained to do that with my daughter, as to thinke of it onely I am so abashed, that I dare not for shame lift vp mine eyes to behold you. But forasmuch as no other thing hath perswaded me therunto, but the desire which I haue to get her a dowry, wherewith I may afterward bestow her honestly, I beséech you to be content, to extend your liberalitie in such sort, as she may haue þ large dowry, which it hath pleased you to promise me.

Thereof I assure you (said the Prince) and larger to then hath béen spoken of to you besides: And also I will minister such reliefe vnto you for your owne state, that you shall haue cause to giue me thankes for the same. Then replied the old gentlewoman and said: Since that you perceiue (sir) that no desire to make marchandize of my daughter, but extreame pouertie, wherevnto my froward Fortune hath brought me, doth driue me to this exigent. I doe likewise beséech you, that you will come vnto my daughter, at such time as I shall deuise most conuenient, with as much regard vnto her credit as may be possible. I will therein be ruled wholy by you (answered the young Prince) and take in what sort you will appoint me to come, so shall it be. The first thing then sir (quoth she) that I thinke requisite, is that you come alone without any company, when I shall assigne you the time, so that the thing rest secret betwéene you and me, and my daughter, and no occasion be giuen to publish it, whereby my daughter might lése her good name.

This courteous young Prince was therewithall well content, and that being concluded and agréed vpon, she said further. I know (sir) the honestie of my daughter to be such, that if I should open my lips vnto her, of any such matter, she would not onely reiect any perswasion, that I might vse vnto her, but also ridde her selfe out of my house. And therefore least that should happen, and to the end that you may haue your desire, and she haue a dowry, wherewith she may be maried, if not withall the honour that the state and calling, wherein she was borne doth require, yet with the least harme that may be possible, since my hard hap is such, and that my pouertie doth so constraine me: I haue determined to doe herein as you shall heare.

My daughter vseth to lye in a lowe Chamber neare vnto the ſtreete doore of my house, in the which Chamber I my ſelfe in like ſort am wonte to lie, whenſoeuer we two remaine alone in the houſe as oftentimes we doe: and commonly I riſing early in the morning about ſuch buſineſſe as I haue, do leaue my daughter in bed, where ſhe ſleepeth ſometimes two houres or three after that I am gone. To morrow morning therefore will I riſe and leaue her alone in that Chamber, and will ſet open the ſtreete doore, ſo as you ſhall not neede but to puſh at it, and the chamber doore likewiſe. You ſhall come very early as we haue concluded all alone, and entring into the Chamber, there ſhall you finde my daughter, and abide with her as long as it ſhall pleaſe your ſelfe. But I doe once againe (Sir) beſeech you as I haue done before, that the matter may paſſe ſecret, and not to be imparted to any other then to vs three, to the end, that where I ſuffer my ſelfe to be lead through neceſſitie, to doe that which I doe, and with an entent to place my daughter in mariage, by the meane of that dowry which you doe giue her, the caſe being knowne, we reape not eternall ſhame and infamie.

At this deuiſe the young Prince paused a while, thinking it ſtrange that he ſhould goe to a young maide, that not onely was vnwilling, but alſo not ſo much as made priuie of his comming, did what he could to refuſe that meane, and to perſwade the mother to deuiſe ſome better. But at the laſt ſeeing none other could be found more fit for the purpoſe, being pricked forward with the vehemencie of that appetite which loue had ſtirred vp in him, conſidering himſelfe to be a Prince, and a gallant young gentleman, and that he ſhould be alone with his loue, thought that it ſhould not be harde for him to winne her to his will: and ſo content to doe as the old gentlewoman had deuiſed. And being parted each from other, he began to attend the comming of the next morning and all that night, which ſeemed longer vnto him then a whole yeare, he lay with his thoughts and imaginations, in the armes of his Lucilla. Aſſone as the day began to peepe, Don Hercules all alone as he had promiſed to the mother, went to the houſe of his lady, & finding the doores open according to promiſe, entered into the Chamber wherein Lucilla lay, and hauing barred the doore, approached nere the bed wherein ſhe lay.

It was in the Moneth of July, which ſeaſon in that Countrie is extreame hotte: by reaſon whereof Lucilla tumbling from one ſide of the bed vnto the other, had rolled of all the cloathes wherewith

ſhe

she had bin couered: so as she had left her selfe all naked, and in that sorte hee found her, with Coralles about her necke and her armes, which with the difference of their ruddy colour did set out and beautifie greatly the excellent fayrenesse of her white bodie. Shee lay asleepe vpon her backe, with her handes cast ouer her head, (as for the most part yong women are wount to do:) so that forth with the yong Prince discouered her from top to toe: and considering with a greedy eye all her whole body, not onely hee commended her to himselfe so naked, as he had done whilest she was apparelled, but also did so singularly well like her in that state, that hee thought hee sawe rather some diuine thing, or some Goddesse come downe from Heauen, to heape him with happinesse, then a mortall creature: And beganne to allowe and commende his owne iudgement, in that hee had placed his loue vpon so excellent a rare a péece. And therewith bowing downe himselfe to giue her a kisse, and so to awaken her. Behold she opened her eies, which right well resembled two fayre shining Starres. And where she was vsed to see none other bodie in that chamber but her mother, when she waked, now seeing this yong Prince standing this ouer her, and finding her selfe in that sort all naked, she gaue a great shritch, and saide.

Out alas sir (for she knew him straight way) what euill happe hath brought you hither at this time? And in so saying as one wonderfully ashamed to bee seene in that plight, she wrapped about her one of the sheetes, and began with a loud voice to call her mother.

But perceiuing that her mother would not heare, and that shee called in vaine, she began to imagine that she was consenting vnto his comming thither, and lamenting with teares that trickled downe her cheekes like droppes of dewe hanging vppon Roses, in a Maie morning, she saide: Alas now I see my mother also hath betrayed me. Which thing the yong Prince vnderstanding, said vnto her. Trouble not your selfe, nor grieue not (faire damsell) at my comming hether, but rather reioyce, that your singular beauty, hath so enflamed me, as one in a manner forgetting my estate, haue béene contented to come hither all alone, as a priuate man to enioy your company, if it will please you to accept my good will, which though a thousand other dames in this Cittie, doe wishe and would be glad of, yet haue I deemed none of them worthy thereof but your selfe. And seeing your Mother, who hath that power ouer you, that in reason she ought to haue ouer her childe, and knoweth best what is for your

your good and commodity, both consent hereunto: you (in my iudgment) are not but to shewyour selfe in like sort content. For in giuing your selfe to me, you do not abase or cast your selfe away vpon any vile person: but shewe your selfe courteous vnto a prince, who your beauty hath made thrall: and in whom you shall finde nothing but gratefull courtesie, to your benefit and satisfaction.

And with these and other like wordes stretched forth his hande toward her breasts, that were like two litle balles of Iuory, & drawing nere her to kisse her, she with her hand thrusting modestly back, said thus.

Sir I beseech you, by the Princely nobilitie that is in you, and by that loue which you say you beare me, that it will please you, not to force mée or to séeke at my handes any thing against my will: and that since my Mother, who ought to haue béene the chiefe defender of my honesty, hath abandoned and forsaken me, you will yet of your courtesie vouchsafe to giue mée the hearing of a fewe wordes, which the speciall care I haue of mine honour doeth force me to expresse.

The courteous yong Prince at this request, staied himselfe proceéding any further: and not beeing desirous to haue her, but with her owne good will, stood still to heare what it was that Lucilla would say vnto him: yet neuer hoping, with faire meanes to winne her at the last. And she weeping very tenderly, beganne to say vnto him in this sort.

I am very sorie (most noble Prince quoth she) that fortune hath béene so much mine enemy, that she hath made mee a woman far vnworthy and vnmeete for you: For that you beeing so great a Prince as you are, and I so meane a Gentlewoman: I sée so great a space betwéene your high estate and my low degree, that betweene vs there can be no portion, or conuenient equalitie: For the which cause (Sir) I considering mine owne estate, and not minding to exceede my calling, haue a good while since, chosen Nicander to be my Louer, who in respect of his blood, though he be richer then I, is no whit nor more nobly borne then my selfe am. By reason of which conformitie of blood and birth, our loue is likewise growne to béequall, and equall the desire in vs both, he to haue me to his wife, and I to haue him for my husband. But the constou[illegible]nesse (let it be lawfull for me to say so) of his father is such, that although he knoweth me to be a gentlewoman borne, yet because I am not of that wealth

as to bring him so great a dowry, as his riches perchance require, he despiseth me, and will not yéelo by any perswasion his good will and consent, that wée may match together according to our desire. Neverthelesse (Sir) I considering how fervently this yong Gentleman loveth me, and that already we are in minde united and knit together, with consent, faith, and loue, do yet beléeue assuredly, that GOD of his speciall goodnesse and fauour, will graunt vs his assured grace, that we may one day be ioyned together in the holy state of Matrimonie. Which thing if it should happen and come to passe, I not hauing any thing els to bring with mee for my dowrye but my virginity, am determined & fully resolued (by Gods helpe) to giue it vnto him, as pure and vnspotted as I brought it from my Mothers wombe. And if my vnhappy chaunce and Fortune be such, as that I cannot haue Nicander to my husband, I haue concluded with my selfe (by the grace of God) neuer to couple my selfe to any man liuing: but to giue and bowe me wholye vnto almighty God, and in his seruice to spend my dayes a virgin, in continuall Fasting and Prayer. Therefore (most excellent Prince) if Honestly, if Iustice, if Religion, haue that power and force in your noble minde, which in reason they ought to haue, I doe beseech you, and for that loues sake that you say you beare me, that you will preserue and keepe vnstained my honestly, and that it would please you with the sound discourse of reason, to temper that feruent appetite which hath brought you hether: to the preiudice and breach of my honestly and credit. In doing wherof you shal shew your selfe to be, indeed that noble prince that the highnesse of your birth and blood doth promise you should be, whereas if you should force and violate me a Virgin, and a weake maiden without defence there could thereof ensue naught els to me but dishonour & reproch, & withall small praise would it be vnto your excellency, when it shall be said that you had ouercome a simple Damsel. And here being interrupted with sobbes & teares exceeding for the griefe of her mind, casting downe her eyes for shame and sorrow she held her peace, attending what her hap and the goodnesse of the Prince should dispose of her, in whose curtesie she had reposed al her hope and confidence.

This yong Prince vnderstanding the honest desire of Lucilla, first praised her greatly to himselfe for the chastnesse of her mind, and being moued with the magnimitie of his noble mind, though he were pricked with the sharpest dart of the blind bopes quiuer, and that his

his ardent appetite did still stir him to the accomplishment of his desire, yet conquering himself with reasō, he turned all the love which erst he bare vnto this yong Lady, into compassion of her estate, and thus he said vnto her. The vertue and honesty of thy minde faire Damsell doe require, that I should make no lesse accompt of thine honour, then if I were come hether to no other entent, then to defende it against any other that should goe about to staine or spot it. Therefore not onely thou needest not to feare any violence at my hands, but also maiest hope that I will not faile to further this thy chast purpose, so that thou maiest enioy that yong gentleman which thou hast chosen for thy husband with all the honour and satisfaction that appertaineth to the honesty of thy mind. And therefore, since nothing els doth let thee from the getting of him but the poverty of thy state, wherunto thy froward fortune hath vnwarily brought thee, I will my selfe supplie in that behalfe, that wherein thee hath failed, & correct with my liberality, the iniury that she hath done thee. And having so said, he himselfe opened the doore & called her mother, who had gotten her selfe into a chamber, and there sate bewailing the miserie of her state, whereby she had bin driuen in such sort to prepare a dowrie for her daughter.

She being come he said vnto her. Gentlewoman, if erst I came hether as a louer vnto your daughter, now I will depart and leaue her as if I were her brother, leaning her honor no lesse safe and vntouched then I found it, for so deserueth her vertue that I should deale with her. And forasmuch, as I perceiue shee is in loue with a yong Gentleman whō I wel know, & is in my opinion very worthy of it, & that he in like sort is in loue with her, and that onely the want of a reasonable dowrie is the cause that she cannot become his wife as she desireth. I am content to bestowe vpō her for her contentment that summe for her dowrie which I had purposed to haue giuen her in recompence of my contentatiō, to the end that this her honest desire may haue that effect, which is most conuenient to so great and welgrounded an affection, and that her great honesty and vertue do deserue. Therfore send you this day vnto my Treasurer, and he shall forth with disburse vnto you 2000. pound, which shalbe the dowrie of this your gentle & honest daughter.

And turning himselfe toward the young Gentlewoman, he said vnto her. And as for you faire Damsell (quoth he) I craue nothing els now at your hands, but that you keepe this faith of yours, wher-

with you are linckéd vnto your louer inuiolate and vnspotted, euen as I do leaue you inuiolate and vnspotted in your mothers handes. How great the ioy of the Mother was, when she saw the honesty of her daughter (as it were) reséued out of this yong Princes handes, by the force of her owne vertue, may better bee imagined then expressed with wordes. But aboue all ioyes, the ioy of Lucilla excéded all other: when she vnderstood that through the magnificence and liberality of the noble yong Prince, she was to haue her Nicander for her husband.

And turning her eyes full of modesty towardes him shée said, I could not (Sir) haue had any more certaine and infallible token of your loue towarde me, then that which now of your great courtesie and bounty you haue shewed me: which I acknowledge to be so great, that I am bounde to yéld your excellency my most humble and infinit thankes. But for asmuch as wordes doe faile mee wherewith I might doe it, I must beseech you, that it may rest in your discreet Iudgement, to consider how much I confesse my selfe to be your debter, when wordes do faile me, to yéld you at the least thankes for so great a benefite.

This onely will I say vnto your Grace, that the remembrance of so noble an act shall neuer weare out of my minde: and that I will so long as I liue, pray vnto almighty GOD, so to preserue and maintaine your noble person, as you of your goodnesse haue saued mine honesty: And so to graunt you the accomplishment of all your noble desires, as you haue offered mée to make mée content of mine, by hauing my Nicander to bée my Husbande: Vnto whom, aswell because I haue euer béene so disposed, as for that it hath pleased your excellencie to commaund mée, I will alwaies keepe sounde and vnstained that faith, which through your courtesie shall ioyne me to him in Marriage.

The Damsell seemed vnto the Prince at that instant to bee in manner greater then she was indeede, when she once stood assured of the sauegard of her honesty: and delighting no lesse in the excellencie of her minde, then he had before done in the beauty of her body, he departed from her.

And hauing caused the two thousand pound to bée paied vnto her Mother as hée had promised: he went vnto the Duke his Father, and told him all that had passed betwéene Lucilla and him: the manner whereof liked so well the Duke, that hée concluded with himselfe, that all the vertues that euer had béene before that time

time in his progenitors, would bee most excellently ioyned in him. This young Prince required his Father, to send for Nicanders father, and to perswade him to agree, that his Sonne might match with Lucilla since that shee was prouided, and furnished with so reasonable a dowrie: which thing the Duke did with a very good will, for that he knew that if his Sonne should haue taken in hand, to perswade the old man to any such matter, it might haue stirred some suspition in his head, why the Prince should so doe? And hauing sent for him accordingly, when he was come, the Duke after some familiar speeches of course and courtesie, told him he was desirous that his Sonne Nicander should take Lucilla to bee his wife, who aswell for her birth, as for the rare giftes of her minde, (as hee had learned) was worthy to bee Wife to any great Lord. The old Gentleman aunswered, that although shee had those vertues and giftes which he spake of, and were verie well borne, yet had shee not any dowrye conuenient, or agreeable to his wealth, whereby shee might deserue to bee matched with his Sonne. Yes Paris said the Duke, for I my selfe because I would not haue so great vertue as in her, to bee oppressed by Fortunes spight, haue bestowed vpō her two thousand pound to serue for her dowry.

The old man hearing of such a summe, was very well content to doe as the Duke would haue him, and the next day through the liberality of the Prince, the marriage was concluded & knit vp, which had so long beene delayed and hindered by the couetousnesse of the old man, and the pouerty of Lucilla, with the infinite ioy and contentment of the two yong Louers, who had long wished and desired that happy day.

What vertue, or what continence of Alexander, or of Scipio may be compared to this? Scipio abstaining from the yong Gentlewoman which was presented vnto him in Spaine, Alexander from Darius his daughter. But it was very easy for either of them so to doe: Aswell because they were in the fury of warre, and the sounds of Drummes and Trumpets: as for that those Women were of a strange Nation, and enemies vnto them, and neuer before that time seene of any of them, much lesse desired. Whereas this yong Prince who euen bathing as it were in blisse, liuing at his ease and pleasure, in the flowre of his youth, and in the heate of his amorous flames, had a gentlewoman of a rare beauty, not of strang Nation, or any otherwise to be hated, but extreamely beloued in his hands,

and voluntarily yéelded, and committed vnto him by her owne mother: and yet not onely tempered himselfe, and refrained to defile her chaste and honest body, but also bestowed liberally her dowrie vpon her, to the end that an other might enioy her, and be her husband, whom she had chosen to loue and like of: did without all question farre excéede all humaine courtesie, in so Noble and so vertuous an acte. Whereby he made apparant, that although he were pricked forward, with the sharpe spurres of Loue, and his sensuall appetite, yet was he of that highnesse of courage, and of that constancie of minde, that he was able not onely to conquer himselfe, but also to subdue the forces of loue, wherevnto both mortall mens valour doth commonly yéeld, and the very power of the Gods themselues (if we shall beléeue the Fables of the auncient writers) hath shewed it selfe often times inferiour.

And thus this honest Damsell Lucilla, by the meanes of her Chastitie, the vertue and excellencie whereof, did winne and maister the heart of that young Prince, much more then the perfection of her bodily beautie had done before, obtained the thing she most desired and hoped in, which was to haue Nicander to her husband. With whom she liued euer after in great contentment and happinesse: still nourishing with kinde and louing demeanour each to other, that feruent affection which from their first acquaintance, had taken full possession of both their liberties.

Of Fineo and Fiamma.

The argument of the iiii. Historie.

The hard aduenture of Fineo, *with his beloued* Fiamma, *who after sundrie conflicts of Fortune, were in the end solde as slaues to the King of* Tunise, *who seeing their perfect loue, caused them to be married, and after honouring them with sundrie presents, sent them home to* Sauona, *where by their Parents and friends, they were ioyfully receiued.*

IN Genoua, one of the faicest and most famous Cities of Italie, there was sometime a young Gentlewoman of excellent beautie called Fiamma, that was in Loue with a young Gentleman of Genoua,

Gauona(a Citie Subiect vnto the State of Genoua,and diſtaunte from thence about thertie miles) whoſe name was Fineo,and their Loue beeing mutuall, and tendyng to no other end, then to be linked and ioyned together by Marriage, they would not long haue ſtayed,to bring their honeſt deſires to a good end and concluſion,had not the Father of the gentlewoman refuſed his conſent,and ſhewed him ſelfe contrary to this their loue and good will. For he miſliking with the match, either for that he purpoſed to place her better, or becauſe hee would not haue her married to any man, that ſhould carry her out of Genoua, did often times chide and reprehend his daughter, for caſting her affection vppon that young Gentleman, that was a ſtraunger vnto them, and in effect but a ſubiect, though hee were both of blood and richeſſe equall vnto them.

But for all that the father could doe, or any other of her friends, the fire which loue had kindled in this yong couples breaſts, ſlacked no whit at all, but ſtill encreaſed, both hoping in the end, to winne her friends good will, and attaine the fruites of their deſired loue. This yong damſel had to her brother a ſtout and valiant yong gentleman, who being offended greatly, that Fineo ſhould continue his loue toward his ſiſter, & follow the purſute of that, which he knew well enough her friendes were vnwillyng to yéld vnto: had cauſed him to bée ſpoken vnto, and to be warned that he ſhould deſiſte and leaue to ſollicite her: but he for al that ceaſed not, but continued his ſuite. Wherfore this brother of hers determined, to make him leaue of, by force and dint of ſword. For although there were at that time a very ſtraight lawe in the Cittie, that no man ſhould weare his ſword, and paine of death appointed for him that ſhould hurte any man with any weapon: Yet both theſe gentlemen weare their ſwordes, for that they both had charge of ſouldiers, that lay then in garriſon for defence of the Cittie.

And hauing one day mette Fineo in the ſtreet alone, and himſelf being very well accompanied with other gentlemen, he beganne to giue him euill language: And being a gentleman of great courage, and though he were a ſtranger there, not being able to endure to be iniured in wordes, ſaied to him boldely and roundely againe, that if they two were alone, he durſt not vſe thoſe ſpeeches vnto him, for he would well giue him to vnderſtand, that he was no man to take wrong at his handes, and that time and occaſion would ſerue

one

one day (he doubted not to make him know that he had offended one that would beare no Coales. Whereupon his aduersarie hauing drawne forth his sword, whilest he was yet speaking, ran fiercely vpon him, thinking to haue striken him. But Fineo also a very lustie gentleman and quick of eye, and nimble of hand, drew out his sword, and not onely warded the blowe of his enemie, but also hurt him, though but lightly in the hand. Forthwith they that were with the young gentlewomans brother, enuironed him, and take him prisoner, and deliuered him into the hands of the Magistrate, or chiefe Officer of the cittie. And the penaltie being such, as is before mentioned, for hurting of any man within the Cittie, and especially a gentleman, Fineo was condemned to lose his head.

Neuertheleſſe, he being very well friended, and supported by many principall gentlemen of the Cittie, they laboured so much for him, that they obteined that he should not be beheaded: But that his penaltie should be conuerted vnto another punishment, verie little better if it were no worse. For hauing bound him fast hand and foote, they laide him in a small boate, and in very stormie weather, set him in the maine sea, and there left him to the rule and gouernment of Fortune, and to the disposition of God, and mercie of the waues and winds. The boate was a long while beaten and tossed, by the rage and furie of the Seas, and poore Fineo vnder diuers and sundry stormes and sharpes, had before his eyes a thousand times the presence of death. Yet in that fearfull and mortall perill, he ceased not to call vpon the name of his deare Fiamma, and in that extremitie and imminent danger, did he yet in manner glorifie himselfe, and thinke himselfe happy, that he should end his life for the loue of his Lady.

Whiles he was thus tossed and tormented, still looking for none other but present death, the Tempest began to cease, and the storme and rage of Seas to be allwaged. When loe he discouered a Frigate of Pyrates that went a roaming, and were then new gone abroad, to spie whether the storme which was then past, had not happely prepared for them, some occasion of gaine and battle. These Pyrates had no sooner discouered this little Boate, thus fleeting at all aduentures, but hoping to finde therein some prey for their profit, they made toward it: And hauing at the boarding thereof, found Fineo bound hand and foote, and perceiuing by his countenance and apparell, that he was no very base person, they vntied him, and set

him

him in their Fregate as a slaue to rowe, vntill such time as they should determine further what to doe with him: who although that seruitude and captiuitie were grieuous vnto him, yet considering with him selfe, that it was better for him to be in the power of men, though they were Infidels, then in the power of Seas and windes: he comforted himselfe, that yet if he liued, he might still hope through the goodnesse of GOD, one day to be so happie, as to enioy his Lady and Loue: he learned him selfe to beare with patient mind, that heauie yoke of his captiuitie.

Fiamma hauing vnderstood the vnfortunat accident happened to her Louer, beleeuing certainly that he was dead, and that she should neuer see him againe. Wherefore she her selfe resoluing that she would no longer liue, gaue her selfe to deuise what kind of death she were best to chuse, & in doubt thereof shee passed some few daies, dissembling still in the house her sorrow and griefe, with a merie and chearfull countenance, as though she had cleane forgotten, and not once remembred her louer Fineo. But in the end, after long debating with her selfe, she resolued to dye the same kind of death, & to make that end, which she imagined Fineo had done.

There was an other gentleman of the Cittie, who was no lesse enamoured of this gentlewoman then Fineo was: Who supposing that now since shee saw there was no remedie, for her to recouer her louer, whom both she and all the Cittie accounted certainly to be dead: hee might perchaunce by fate obtaine her good will, and so procure her to be his wife, with the consent of her friendes. And therefore not long after the mischaunce of Fineo, he caused her father to bee dealt withall for the bestowing of his daughter vpon him: And the Father being willing enough to agree thereunto, & hauing questioned with his daughter thereupon, and finding her to giue sober and obedient answere with few wordes, presupposing that she was willing to doe as he would haue her, made promise of her vnto this yong gentleman, and agreed vpon the dowrie, and al other circumstances necessarie, for the coupling of two such persones together.

The night that went before the day appointed for their Marriage Fiamma calling vnto her a Mayde that was slaue in her Fathers house, & had the keeping of a small Boate of the gentlemans, wherein when he list to dispoze him selfe, he was wont to take the aire vpon the sea, in time of faire weather, and to goe to their houses of

sure, whereof that coast is verie plentiful, & them of exceading beautie. Which Moore had liued so many yeares in that thraldom, that he was now become so olde as shee thought, she needed not to feare any force or violence at his handes, she beganne to perswade him, to put on a desire to deliuer himself out of Captiuitie, so as he might liue the rest of his yeares in libertie and at his ease: whereunto finding him ready and willing, if the meanes or occasion where offered him shee gaue him in hand a good round summe of money, which she had laied together, and made him promise to carrie her into the sea in the Boate, wherof he had the custodie, & afterwardes to doe that whatsoeuer it were, that she should command him.

This wicked and faithlesse Moore, seeing himselfe not onely to purchase his libertie, but also make so great a gaine of ready money, that he was not like at any time after, to liue in want or pouertie, was onely thankefull in his minde toward the young Gentlewoman, but straight way began to purpose and to deuise, to make a greater gaine of her own persone, by carrying her vnto the King of Tunise, and selling of her vnto him at a verie high prise. And with this intention, the mischeeuous knaue assured her, that he would doe in all pointes, as shee would haue him. Wherefore when all the rest of the house were in their first sleape, the Damsell with this wretched Moore, went out of her fathers house, & gather into the boate, and the weather being verie faire, the knaue began to rowe & make saile along the coast, toward Ligorno from which by breake of the day, they were not verie farre. When this yong gentlewoman, sawe that she was now so farre from home, that she needed not to feare to be driuen back againe to Genoua, she willed the Moore to rowe to the shore and to land himselfe, and then to shoue of the boate againe: for that her determination was so to die, swallowed vp with the waues of the sea, as she supposed her Fineo to haue been. But the wicked knaue, who had a farther fetch in his head and thoughts farre differed from the Gentlewomans, made her beleeue that they were yet neere vnto Genoua, and aduised her to be content, that they might goe somewhat farther, to the ende that her father if he sent after them, might not ouertake them.

Neuerthelesse, shee hauing often times vrged him to doe as shee erste bad him, and hee still protracted the time, and shifting her off with one tale or an other: she began to suspect his drift. The morning therefore beeing well spent, shee made, as though shee would

haue

haue loked ouer the Boate side, into the water, or haue washed her hands in the Sea, and on the sodaine would haue cast her selfe ouer board. But the craftie Moore suspecting her entent, caught hold of her aboute the middle, and not onely held her from throwing her selfe into the Sea, but also bound her fast hand and foote and whereas she of her courtesie had both set him at liberty, and liberally bestowed good store of wealth vpon him, he as a treacherous Infidell bereaued her of her libertie, making her an vnfortunate slaue vnder his dispositiõ, and being moued with a greedie couetous mind, thought that to little which she had giuen him, and therefore determined (as is afore saied) to sell her person, and to encrease his goods by that meanes.

The desolate Damsell, when she saw her selfe so vsed by that villaine, full of woe and greefe, ceased not to rebuke the vilde Caitiue, that little regarded her speeches, the breach of his faith & promise, and blaming her selfe for trusting of him, and then repented when it was two late, that she had not obeyed her father, & followed the aduise of her friendes, she began to curse her Destinie and her cruell Fortune, and to crie out vpon the Heauens, that had made her become the vnfortunatest yong woman that euer loued man.

And whilest she was thus lamenting her hard hap, and the Moore as fast as he could with his Oares, labouring to spede his voyage: A little Foiste or Galley of Moores, that went proling vp and downe the Coast, hauing espied the small Boate, drew neere vnto it, and boorded it. And hauing found this young Gentlewoman being bound therein, they would haue taken her away: but the old knaue offering to resist them, and to kepe her out of their hands, they toke her away from him perforce, and wounding him very sore. And asked of her in their language, from whence she came, and what she was: But she not vnderstanding them, could make them no answer, but onely with teares and weeping, make them to vnderstand, that she was a wofull and vnfortunate Damsell. But the olde Moore feeling himselfe wounded to death, before he died tolde them, both of what place and parentage she was, and laide before them by plaine reason, how great a botie they might accompt they had made that morning, if they did carrie her vnto the king of Tunise, (as he had thought to haue done) and sell her vnto him. He being dead, they dispoiled him, & toke from him all that which Fiamma had giuen, and so he hauing thought by treacherie, and

breaking of his faith, to make great gaine loſt both his life and all that which hee had gotten of the vnaduiſed, and euill counſelled yong gentle woman. And hauing placed her in their Foiſt, and comforted her aſwell as they could, they take their way ſtraight towards Tuniſe.

It fortuned that the other Fregate of Moores, that had found & taken Fineo (as is alreadie ſaied before) met with this other Foiſt or Gallie, wherein Fiamma was, and aſſaulted it, & hauing fought together a good while (for that the other reſiſted, and defended themſelues ſtoutly) in fine, the Fregate wherein Fineo was (who in the encounter and during the fight, had ſhewed great valour among the reſt) ouercame the other, and tooke from them all that they had: ſo that Fiamma and Fineo were both now together, in the compaſſe of one ſmal veſſell. And although in that extremitie of both their euill fortunes, it was a great comfort for theſe two Louers to ſee one the other, and that both longed and deſired extremely, to embrace ech other, and to tell the one to the other their accidents, and vnfortunate aduentures. Neuer theleſſe Fineo made ſignes to Fiamma, that in no wiſe ſhe ſhould take knowledge, or acquaintance of him, and accordingly ſhe diſſembled and made no ſhewe, but as one had neuer ſeen him.

Fineo for the valour and courage, which he had ſhewed in the battaile, was deliuered of his chaines, and much made of among the Moores, vntill ſuch time as they had conducted both him and her (as they did verie ſhortly after) vnto the king of Tuniſe. Who hauing ſeen and conſiderd Fineo, and vnderſtood by the Pirates, that his comelie perſonag was accompanied with great valour, brought him, and tooke him to his ſeruice in good place nere his owne perſon. And being moued with the beautie of the yong Gentlewoman, bargained for her likewiſe, for a great ſumme of money, and cauſed her to bee put in the Cube, which is a place where he keepeth his Concubines (as the Turke doeth his in his Serraglio) among a great many of other women, and eſtéemed her verie much for: that the Rouers (who had learned of thoſe other that they ouercame) all that which the olde Moore had declared vnto them, of her calling and condition, did aſſure him that ſhe was a Gentlewoman, borne of a noble familie in Genoua.

Fineo by his ſeruice and diſcret behauiour, became in ſhort time verie deare vnto the King, ſo that in leſſe then the ſpace of one whole yeare,

peare, the King of speciall trust gaue him the charge of the gate of the Cube, which office the Kings of Tunise are neuer wont to giue, but vnto such as are in singular fauour about them: In the which Fineo to his great contentment, had the commoditie daiely to sée his Fiamma, and she had no lesse comfort and satisfaction to behold and looke vpon him, which opportunitie they enioyed and handeled so discretly, that they neuer gaue any cause of suspition to any persone of their feruent good will and affection.

The manner or custome of the King was, to cause his Concubines to come vnto him, and to lie with them by order, as they had béen bought or come to his handes: By reason of which custome, for that there were very many bought before the comming thether of Fiamma, there was already a whole yeare and a halfe wel nie past after her sale, and yet her turne was not come to be called for. Wat remaining now but three others to be brought vnto the King before her. Fineo considering to his intollerable griefe, that she was ere it were long to bée likewise called for, beganne to be tormented with incredibile passion and anguish of minde: and his woe encreased tenne thousand folde, by feare and imagination which he conceiued, that she being aboue al the kings Concubines farre the fairest, when he had once enioyed her, he would take her to be one of his wiues, which feare did no white lesse torment and afflict Fiamma, then it did her Louer.

Whilest both these yong Louers liued in this sorte, there chaunced to arriue at Tunise a Shippe of Sauona, with certaine Marchauntes of that Citie: who séeing Fineo there and knowyng him, were wonderfully amarueiled finding him aliue, for that he had béen lamented at Sauona of all his friendes for dead, Fineo likewise knowing those Marchauntes, and hauing auctoritie and meanes to pleasure them in the Court, welcomed them, and made much of them in friendly sort: and demanding of the state and welfare of his father and brother & other friendes, they certified him that they were all well, and that when they should vnderstand that hée was aliue and in so good a case, they would bee very ioyfull, and thinke themselues happy if they might hope to sée him once come againe, as they doubted not but one day he would and might.

These Marchantes hauing dispatched their businesse departed thence, and by them Fineo wrote letters to his father, and to his brother, certifiyng them of his being in Tunise, and how that Fiamma

was with him, and that he desired to deliuer himself out of bondage, and her with him: which thing he thought he might easily bring to passe, if his brother would come thither, and withall described vnto them a plot, which he had cast for the execution of his entent and desire.

They being returned safe vnto Sauona, deliuered the letters vnto the father and brother of Fineo, who with the rest of his friendes, and in effect all the whole Citty, were verye glad that his Fortune had not beene altogether so froward toward him, as they had supposed.

And his brother according to his instructions, prepared a very pretty Fregat, very well appointed and furnished with Marchandize, among which there were many trifles, and things of price meet for Ladies and gentlewomen, And being arriued therewith at Tunise, Fineo brought them vnto the king, whom they presented with some thinks of small price, which were very gratefull and acceptable vnto him, and among other speeches they said, that they had aboard many pretty things for Dames and Ladies, which thing the King vnderstanding, commanded Fineo that the chiefest of them might be brought into the Cube, to shew such things as they had vnto his Concubines: By which occasion he gat that opportunity which he looked for, to conferre and deale more priuately with them without suspition, and to giue the better order for the accomplishment of almuch as he had deuised.

Fineo and his brother therefore being come into the Cube, shewed forth among those women such wares as they had brought to please their fancies, and gaue vnto them all some one trifle or an other, as a gentle present to the first, and the brother of Fineo presented Fiamma among the rest, with a very faire Purse richly embrodered with gold & Pearle, in the which there was enclosed a letter written by Fineo, by the contents whereof she might vnderstand at large al that which he did wishe and would haue her to doe, to make their escape together, and to rid themselues out of that thraldome and captiuity. Allbeit as the two brethren had done that they came for and were departed, Fiamma by their manner gathering, that the gift of that Purse contained some mistery, withdrew her self into a secret place, & hauing opened it, she found therein the letter, which when she had read, she thanked almighty God, that of his goodnesse had shewed her the way to deliuer her selfe out of captiuity, & from becomming

vitho-

dishonestly the Concubine of an Infidell King.

And when this appointed day for the performing of their purpose was come: Fiamma in the night when al was silent, and others slept, came to a window barred with Iron, where Fineo and his brother were attending for her: who with certaine Instruments which they had brought for that purpose, brake and wrested the grate of the window, and taking her away with them, they gotte her into their Barcke, and hoysed saile, and directed their course with a merrye winde toward the coast of Italie, which serued them very faire all that night long, and the most part of the next day. In the morning Fiamma being missed and Fineo likewise, the King (was aduertised of their escape) who perceiuing the Merchauntes to be gone also, rested assured that it was a set match made for the stealing of Fiamma away. And being full of rage and despight towardes them all, hee caused certaine Gallies and other light vessells to bee armed in all haste, and to be sent after them, giuing straight charge and commission to his captaines, that either they should bring Fineo and the Damsell, with the chiefe of the Marchantes alive vnto him, because he would haue them al three to be buried alive: Or that if they could not get them alive, they should bring their three heads for that hee would haue them be set ouer the Cube, for an example and a terrour to all others.

But before those Gallies and other vessels could be in a readinesse to depart: Fortune not hauing yet her fill of persecuting and afflicting these two poore louers, caused a contrary wind, with an extreame storme and tempest to arise, by force whereof the vessel wherin they were, was not without great daunger driuen back againe to Tunise, with so much griefe and sorrow of all them that were in it, as they may imagine that know the cruelty and barbarousnesse of that people. But in the beginning of the the storme, the brother of Fineo dispairing of his life, as he that was assured either to be drowned by rage of the winde seas, or else to die in torment if he returned into the hands of those Infidels, gat himself into his Cockboate, and therein hazard his life: and after much aboe, and a thousand perils of present death, recouered the coast of Italy at the last, and returned home to Sauona full of woe, with heauy tidings declaring vnto his father, that either the Fregate would be lost, or els driuen backe againe to Tunise, where he was well assured that both his brother & young damsel his louer, should be murthered in most cruell maner.

At

At which dolefull newes, the father, as if he had seene his Sonne lye dead before him, beganne to weepe and lament, complaining of his hard destinie that caused him to line so long, or reserued him to see those cruell and bitter daies.

Fineo seeing himselfe brought to so hard an exigent, for that their vessell was now driuen backe nére vnto Tunise, and knowing that he should feele the smarte of his fault, and the Kings anger in sharpest manner and sort: béeing determined to liue no longer, and to preuent the cruelty of the King drew out his sworde, & would therewith haue stroken himselfe to death. But Fiamma catching him by the arme: Alas Fineo (quoth she) what shal become of me if you bée dead? Shall I remaine behinde to indure the cruell torments that I know this Infidell hath prepared for mée? Yet rather since that death must needes deliuer vs of our misfortunes, before you execute vpon your selfe this your determination, ridde mée out of the world, and deliuer me from the paines, which already I féele in my imagination, wherewith I assure my selfe they will bring me to a shamfull death. And with these words offering her breast vnto him, shée requested him to strike her with his sword. But Fineo had her bée of good comfort, for your beauty (my Fiamma said he) béeing so singular as it is, I know will saue you, and therefore you néede not feare, and I alone should bee the man that they would plague, & torment to death for vs both, and therefore (my deare) suffer me to die before, and content thy selfe to liue, and vouchsafe sometime to remember thy vnfortunate Fineo when he is dead.

Whilest they were thus talking and debating which should first dye, the people which the King had sent out to apprehend them, came and boarded their Fregate, and tooke them both, whom they bound in chaines, and brought on land to the presence of the King. Who assoone as he beheld the beauty of Fiamma, felt his former wrath and cruelty entended to relent, and in much milder manner then the two captiues hoped or looked for, he said vnto her: Tell me what mooued you, I pray you faire Damsell to runne away, and fly from me, at whose hands you had no cause to looke for any other entreaty, then louing and friendly? Fiamma who in that peare and a halfe that she had bin in the Cube, had learned the language indifferently well: made answer vnto him. That no cause or meaning to flye from him, but her earnest desire to enioy Fineo, whom shee had loued and chosen for her husband many yeeres before, had forced her

to

to doo that which she had done: And herewith she told him the beginning of their acquaintance and loue, and how many perils and dangers they had run through, still hoping one day to come vnto that happy houre, wherein their troubles should haue an end, and that they might bée honestly united and enioy one another: And finally casting her selfe downe at his féet, with abundance of teares, she besought him withall humility to pardon her, if she had offended him, and withall to forgiue Fineo, since that long and faithfull loue, had made them to procure the accomplishment of their desires.

The teares of Fiamma and the onely name of Loue were of such force and vertue in the heart of the king, though he were barbarous and cruell of nature, that the Ire and hatred which he had conceiued against them before, was then conuerted and chaunged into pitty & compassion of their misfortunes, and where before he had appointed a cruell death to bée their punishments, he now determined to ouercome with his courtesie, the frowardnesse of their peruerse Fortune: and to make them, after so many perilles and daungers contented & happy, and to see an end at last of their miseries, by making them to enioy their long hoped for desires. Wherefore hauing caused them to bée both forthwith vnbound, he tooke from his owne finger a marueilous faire and precious Rubie, and giuing it vnto Fineo, her said vnto him: since your Fortune hath bin such that after so many strange aduentures, and through such daungers you are fallen into my hands, I for my part wil not be he that wil extinguish, or quench the flames of so feruent and constant loue, or vnloose or dissolue the bandes wherewith your hearts bee bound and knit together. And therefore Fineo, I doe not onely pardon you both, but also I will haue thee before thou depart hence to wedde this Damsell with this ring, & to take her for thy wife, & that thee henceforth enioy thée for euer as her husband, it is not to be demanded whether the two louers, (who looked for none other of the Kings courtesie then death) were glad to heare him vse those speeches yea or no. But both being fallen on their knees, and in humblest maner hauing yeelded their thankes vnto his Maiestie. Fineo in his presence wedded Fiamma and tooke her for his wife, to the vnspeakeable ioy and contentation of both their hearts and mindes. And the King to honour their mariage, caused a sumptuous feast to be prepared with no lesse charge & abundance of all things, then if he had married a daughter of his owne to some great Lord or chiefe man of that Country.

And after certaine daies, the two yong married louers beeing desirous to returne into their owne Country, he gaue them very riche and costly presents, & sent them honourablie accompanied home to Sauona: whose arriuall was no lesse mernailous then ioyfull to the father and brother of Fineo, and to all the Citty, they hauing beene assuredly esteemed and accompted as dead. Afterwards they sent to Genoua to Fiammas father and brother, certifying of all that had happened, who then perswading themselues that God and Nature had created those two yong folke, to be matched and ioyned together in Wedlocke, were well contented with that which they saw was Gods will should be. And being gone both to Sauona, the father imbraced and accepted Fineo for his sonne in lawe, and the brother for his brother in law. And the two yong louers liued euer after in great happinesse and felicity, giuing by this successe of their hards Fortune, an assured argument & a notable example, whereby we may learne, that though froward fortune do for a while, crosse and molest the desires and trauailes of men, yet in the end she cannot let, but that of necessity those things must come to passe, which God by his diuine prouidence wherewith he ruleth the whole world, hath appointed shall take effect.

FINIS.

Of two Bretheren and their wiues.

The argument of the fist Historie.

¶ *Two brothers making choise of their wiues, the one chooseth for beauty, the other for riches, it happened vnto them after they were married, the one of their wiues proued to be of light disposition, the other a common scold, in what manner, they liued with their husbands, and how in the ende the first became to liue orderly and well, but the other could bee brought by no deuise, to any reason or good manner.*

Gentlewo-

GEntlewomen, before I will procéede any farther in this History, I must desire you to arme your selues with patience in reading hereof, that if you find any thing that might bréede offence to your modest mindes take it in this sorte, that I haue written it onely to make you merry, and not to set you a snarring or grudging against me, for although I meane to present you with a Chapter of Knauery, yet it shall be passable, and such as you may very well permit, & the matter ẏ I mind to write is vpon this question, whether a man were better to be married to a wife Harlot, or to a Foolish ouerthwart & brauling Woman, this question I know will seeme very doubtful vnto some, and yet in my opinion very easie to be answered, and to speake my mind without dissimulation of both those euils, I thinke the first is least, and therefore is to bee chosen, and herein I could alledge for my better proofe, an example of the auncient Romanes, who in all their gouernments were most wise and politique amongst whom the infirmity of the first was borne withall, because it procéeded of the frailty of the fleshe, but the outrage of the second was euer condemned, for that it did abound from a wicked and mischieuous minde.

And in common reason, it is not lesse noisome for a man, to liue accompanied with a wife, who although she wil somtime flye out, can so wisely dissemble with her husband, that hee shall neuer so much as suspect her, whereby hée shall receiue no discontentment in his mind, then to be bedfellowe with Xantippa a common scold, who daily and hourely will bee checking, taunting, and railing at him, in such sort, that he shall thinke himselfe most blest and happy, when he is farthiest from her company, but for your better confirmation, I haue set forth this historie of two brethren, the one of them married to a wench, that could so cunningly behaue her selfe towardes him that he had thought shee had beleeued there had bin no other God but himself, and yet by your leaue, she would take reason when it was proffered her, but what of that: the heart neuer grieues, what the eies see not.

The other was married to a Dame, that from her nauill downward was more chaste and continent, but otherwise of her tongue such a Deuill of hell, that the poore man her husband could neuer enioy merrie day nor howre, although hée deuised manie a prety

remedie, as by the readyng of the processe of this tale you shall better perceiue, which followeth in this sorte.

There was sometime remainyng in a famous Cittie two brethren, the eldest (according to the custome of the place) enioyed his fathers goodes and possessions after his death, whereby he was well able to liue, the youngest had neither landes nor liuynges, sauyng that his Father had trained him vp in learning, whereby hée was able to gouerne himselfe, in all manner of companies where soeuer he became. These two brethren being weary of their single liues, disposed them selues to marriage: The eldest béeing of himselfe well able to liue, sought a wife onely for her beautie, without any other respect either to her conditions or riches, and as the Prouerb is (he that séekes shall finde) so in the end hé lighted on a Gentlewoman, called by the name of Pistres Doritie, whose beautie in déede was verie excellent, and there withall had a pasling ready witte, Parie her training vp had not béen after the best, nor worst manner, but as a man might say after the common sort: this gentlewoman he Married, who could so well handle him with kissynges, cullinges, and other amorous exercises, that her husband thought himselfe, the most fortunate man that liued, to light on such a wife, although she cunningly armed his head with hornes, as after you shall heare.

The second brother left (as you haue heard) without maintenaunce or liuing, sought for a wife onely to releéue his want, & fortuned to hit of a widowe indéede with great wealth, but in conditions so ouerthwart, and so spitefull of her tongue, that the poore man had not béen Married fully out a moneth, but he more then a thousand times, curséd the priest that maried him, the Sorten that opened the Church doore when he went to be married, yea, & his owne vnhappy legges that had carried his body to bee poked to so great a mischéefe. But because I doe minde more orderly to tel you the maners of these 2. gentlewomen: I wil first begin with Pistres Doritie, whose husband after they had bin a while maried, fortuned to fal sick, and then according to that Countrey manner, a Doctor of Phisicke was presently sent for, who comming many times to visite his patient, began to behold and contemplate the lively beautie of this gentlewoman, and lent her many rowling looke, and secrete countenaunces, in such sort that Pistres Doritie being well practised in the Arte of Loue, and seeyng Maister Doctor to be a man as

sufficient,

ſufficient, to content a gentlewoman in her Chamber that was whole as to miniſter Medicines to thoſe that were ſicke, did not only requite him againe with looke for looke, but ſhée yelded him a large diurie, and paied him more then fourtie in the hundred, Maiſter Doctor who was likewiſe ſkilfull enough, could well perceiue whereto thoſe lookes did tend: Vpon a time being alone in her companie, he ſaied vnto her as followeth.

Miſtres Doritie, if the experience which I haue learned in Phiſickes arte, might craue credite, and make my tale to be the better beléeued, aſſure your ſelfe then that I minde to ſay nothing but that that ſhall be to your owne behoofe, and the reaſon that makes me to enter into this diſcourſe, is the pittie that I take to ſée ſo proper a gentlewoman as your ſelfe, ſhould be ſo deceiued in a huſband, who although you ſhal finde him both honeſt, gentle, and louing yea, and peraduenture may content you with ſuch rightes, as appertaine to the Marriage bedde, yet aſſure your ſelfe hée ſhall neuer be able to get you with child, conſidering your Natures and complexitions bee ſo farre different the one from the other, whereby you are like for euer to remaine without iſſue, and one of the greateſt comfortes that may happen vnto vs in this worlde, is to ſée our ſelues as it were regenerate and borne a new in our children, and barrennéſſe in the auncient time, hath béen accompted not onely infamous, but alſo moſt hatefull amongſt women, in ſo much that Sara gaue her owne handmaide to her huſband, becauſe ſhe could not her ſelfe conceiue a child: but I would wiſh women more wit, then to followe Saras example. God defend they woulo be ſo ſwilfh to giue their maidens to their Huſbands, I would wiſh them rather them ſelues to take their men, it hath béen euer holden for the greater wiſdome, rather to take then to giue, and ſure they ſhal finde it more for their owne profites, that if their huſbandes want be ſuch, that hée is not able to get a childe, to take helpe of ſome other, that may ſupplie his imperfections, but I truſt I ſhall not néede to vſe many perſwaſions, conſidering that euery wiſe woman will thinke, that I haue reaſon on my ſide: Thus Miſtres Doritie, you haue heard the ſumme of my tale, protéſting, that if my ſeruice may any waies ſtand you in ſtead, I am as ready to obey, as he ouer whom you haue power to command.

Miſtres Doritie, who all this while had wel pondered his wordes, knew verie well how to whet maiſter Doctor on, and the more

to set his teeth on edge, aunswered him thus: I perceiue Maister Doctor you are something pleasantly disposed, and hereafter when I shall finde my husbandes infirmitie to bee such as you haue saide, I meane to send for you, desiring you, that you would not be out of the waie, to helpe me when I haue neede.

The Doctour knewe not well who to vnderstand these wordes, whether they were merily spoken, or otherwise in disdaine of his former talke, aunswered thus. Alas Mistres Doritie, pardon me if my wordes seeme any thing offensiue vnto you, assuring you that in this meane space, that I haue made my recourse to your husbande, (whose health by the sufferance of God, I haue now well restored) am my selfe faine into a Feuer so extreame, as neither Galen, Hypocrates, Auicen, Plinie nor any other that euer gaue rules of Phisicke, could yet prescribe a Medicine for the maladie, or diet to suppresse the humour that feedes it: I shall not neede to vse longe circumstance in the matter, knowing your wisedome to bee such, that you can well conceiue the summe of all my greefe, it is your beautie that is like to bréede my bane, and hath alreadie driuen me into the greatest depth of daunger, vnlesse some plaintes of pittie may prenaile, to yelde remorse to him, that bowes himselfe to doe you seruice during life.

Mistres Dorotie seyng the matter sorted out as she looked for, could tel well enough how to handle maister Doctor, and to make him the more eger, she delaied him of with doubtfull speeches, but yet fedde him still with such entising and pleasaunt countenances, that ministered great hope of comfort to his desease, she aunswered thus.

And could you then finde in your heart (Maister Doctor) to deceiue your very friend of his deare and loving wife, how can you offer him so manifest an iniurie, to whom you are so lately linckt in so great a league of friendship: as is betweene my husband and your selfe, I can not thinke maister Doctor, that it is good will that hath caused you to moue this sute vnto me, but rather to see how I were disposed, or peraduenture you vse these wordes for exercise sake, knowing the fashion of you men to be such, as by praising of our beautie, you thinke to bring vs into a fooles paradize, that wée will giue credite straight way, that you loue vs so soone as you shall but tell vs the tale: but for my part (Maister Doctor) although I want wit to encounter you with wordes, so likewise I want will to

beleeue

beléeue any thing that you haue ſayd, to be otherwiſe then words of courſe.

Theſe ſpéeches did ingender ſuch a number of ſwéete and ſowre alterations in maiſter Doctor, that for his life he will not how to vnderſtand them: one while they were like to driue him to diſpaire: An other while they ſomething quieted him with hope, but in the ende determining to follow what he had begun, he ſaid.

Sweete miſtres, moſt humbly I deſire you to accompt of mée, not according to my deſertes, which as yet are none at all, but according to the dutifull ſeruice, which hereafter I vow faithfully to doe vnto you, and for the better teſtimonie of my wordes which (as you ſay) ſéeme to be of ſuch ordinary courſe, I deſire no other credit may bée giuen them, then ſhall bée agreable to my déedes, when it ſhall pleaſe you to commaunde, but alas for the iniurie which you ſpeake of, that I ſhould offer to your huſband, who indéed I make accompt to bee my verie friend, what is he I pray you, that is able to preſcribe lawes to loue? And as loue is without law, ſo it is without reſpect, either of friend or foe, Father or brother, rich or poore, mightie or weake, vertuous or vicious: the examples are ſo many and generall, that I ſhould but waſt the time to repeate them. But (Miſtres Dorithe) I proteſt the verie cauſe that maketh mee to moue this matter vnto you, is for no ill will that I beare to your huſband, but for the good will I beare to your ſwéete ſelfe, you may vſe your huſband as your huſband, and mé as your friend, glad to ſtand at reuerſion, when your huſband may take his fill of the banket, and bée glutted with more then enough: farther, if you make ſo great accompt of your huſbands good liking as you ſay, what wiues be euer better beloued, or more made of by their huſbands, then thoſe that haue diſcretion to helpe their friends when they néede. But what ſottiſh opinion is this, which ſo many doth holde, that they thinke it ſo great an iniurie for a man, to ſéeke the wife of his friend, when he is attached by loue, whoſe arreſt, neither Gods nor men haue béene euer able to reſiſt.

But I pray you (Miſtreſſe Dorithy) if I might aſke you this queſtion, would you not thinke your good will better beſtowed vpon your huſbands friende then his foe, if you loue your huſband, I am ſure you will ſay I haue reaſon, what ſhould I longer trouble you then with circumſtances: I know you are wiſe, and now

I

I desire you for the good will that you beare to your husband, to pittie me his friend, whom I trust you will restore with one drop of mercy, & the rather for your husbands sake.

How thinke you gentlewomen, bee not these gentle perswasions to be vsed by a Doctor, Marie he was no Doctor of Diuinity: and therefore you néede not followe his Doctrine vnlesse you like your selues, but this pitifull Gentlewoman, seeing Maister Doctor at such desperate points, for feare of damning of her own soule, that so deare a friend to her husband as Maister doctor was, should perishe and be so wilfully cast away through her default, she receiued him for her friend, and so I pray God giue them ioy.

But it fortuned afterwards, this Gentlewoman to light into the companie of a Lawyer, who perceiuing this dame to bee of such excellent beauty, ioyning himselfe some thing néere her, he said: Gentlewoman, although I haue no skil in the art of painting, yet assure your selfe, your forme and passing beauty, is so surely engraued and fixed in my mind, that although your selfe were absent, I could draw your perfect counterfet, sauing that I thinke all the Apothecaries in this citty, were not able to furnish me with colours to make the perfit disdaine of the beauty in your face.

Mistresse Dority knowing whereto these speeches pretended, answered: And sir, it should séeme you would proue a passing painter, that can so cunningly Painte forth with wordes, that which I know is too far vnworthy of so excellent a florish, as you would giue it, Mistresse (quoth the Lawyer) if I haue committed any offence, in these wordes which I haue spoken, it is in that I haue taken vpon me to praise your beauty, and not able to giue it such commendations, as I see it doth deserue, the sight whereof doth so captiuate my affections, and hath so creepled all my senses, that it hath caused mee in manner to forget my selfe, no marualle then though my tongue doth faile, and is not able to expresse the perfection of you, vnto whom with bowe of continuall seruice, I subiect my life, liuing, and liberty, if it please you to accept of it.

This Gentlewoman, that had yet but one friende to trust vpon, bestoes her husband, began to thinke that store was no sore, and therefore determined not to forsake his friendly offer, but first shee demaunded of him of his faculty, and what trade of life hee vsed, to which he answered, that he was a Gentleman appertaining to the

Lady

Lawe. If my will be so (quoth she) for I perceiue by your experience, that this is not the first plea that you haue framed. And yet beléeue me (quoth the Lawyer) I was neuer brought before, to plead at Beauties barre, but if the my hap is such, I humblie holde vp my hands, desiring to be tryed, by your courtesie and mine olde loyaltie, contenting my selfe to abide such doome and iudgement, as it shall pease you to appoint, being the chiefe & Soueraigne Iudge your selfe, she replying, sayd: Seeing you haue constituted me to giue Sentence at my pleasure, it is not the office of a good Iusticer, to be partiall in his owne cause, and therefore this is the hope you shall looke for at my hands, that if hereafter in your deeds, I shall sée as plaine proofe of perfect good will, as your wordes by pretence import likelyhod of earnest Loue, you shall finde me ready to render such recompence, as shall fall out to your owne contentation and liking: This comfortable answer very well pleased him, and within a very little space after, he so handeled the matter, that he had entred his action in her Common place. Thus what betweene Maister Doctor on the one side, who was still ministering of Phisicke vnto her, so long as there were any Drugges remaining in his Storehouse, and the Lawyer on the other side, who sufficiently instructed her with his Lawe: they vsed such haunt vnto this Gentlewomans companie, that the one began to growe suspicious on the other, and each of them desirous to haue her seuerall to himselfe, began in the end to enueigh the one against the other: the Doctor against the Lawyer, and the Lawyer against the Doctor, and to tell her to her face what they suspected, the one against the other. But Mistresse Dorithie being very angrie with them both, that would so narrowly looke into her doings, did thinke it had been sufficient for reasonable men, that she had receiued them into her fauor, & as often as it had pleased them to come, she welcomed them as themselues did desire, and what can a man desire any more, then to drinke so often as he shall be a thirst. But with faire speeches she contented them both for a time: but she thought in the end to finde a remedy for that mischiefe.

And thus it fell out, that a Souldiour, who was lately returned from the warres, I gesse about the same time, that King Henry the fift was returned, from the winning of Agincourt field: this Souldiour I say hauing it out about the streetes of the Citie (as commonly the customs of Souldiours is, to spend more in a moneth,

then they get in a yeere) as he roamed to and fro, a fortuned to espie this blasing starre looking out at a windowe, was sodainly stroken into a great maze, to see this Lampe of light, then euer he had bén in the fielde to see the Ensignes of his enemies, and was so farre ouercharged with her loue: that but for feare to haue bén marked by the passers by, he would haue stoode still gazyng and looking vpon her: but learning in the ende that shée was the Pistres of the house, he began to deuise how he might make her vnderstand the feruencie of his Loue, on which he determined to write vnto her: But then he knewe not how to beginne his Letter, because Souldiours are very seldome accustomed to endite, especially any of these louyng lines: And to speake vnto her, he was likewise to learne how to vse his tearmes, neither wist he how to come into her presence, but you shall see how Fortune fauoured him.

For in an euening as he passed through the stréet, she was sitting alone in her booze to take the aire, and comming vnto her, not knowing for his life how to begin his tale: In the ende, Pistres (quoth he) I praie you is your husband within? No surely sir (quoth shee) he is aboue in the Towne, but I know not where: And I would gladly haue spoken with him (quoth the Souldiour) if he had bén within: Beléeue me sir he is not within (quoth she) but if it please you to leaue your arrante with me, at his comming home I will shew him your minde. In faith Pistres (quoth the Souldiour) my arrant is not great, I would but haue craued his helpe in chusing me a wife, because I perceiue he hath some experience in the faculte, or els I thinke he could neuer haue chosen so well for himselfe. If your arrante be no other then this (quoth Pistres Dorotie) you may at your owne leasure come and doe it your selfe, and as for my husbandes experience that you speake of, although peraduenture it bée not fitting to your fancie, yet I am well assured that he hath made his choyse of such a one, as hée himselfe very well liketh.

I beléeue it well (quoth the Souldiour) and if without offence I might speake it, I sweare so God helpe me, I like his choise so well, that I would thinke my selfe more then a thousand times happy, if I might be his halfe, or if my worthinesse deserued not so great a portion, I would craue no more then your selfe would willingly bestowe on me, accordingly as you should sée me able to deserue it.

Why

Why sir (quoth Mistresse Dorothy) I doe not vnderstand whereunto your speeches doth tend, neither what part you would haue me to giue you, when I haue already bestowed of my husband, both my hand, my heart, my minde, and good will. Alas Gentlewoman (quoth the Souldiour) these be none of them that I would craue, there is yet an ouerplus which you haue not yet spoken of, which if you please to bestow of a Souldiour, I should thinke my selfe the happiest man aliue, whose loue & good liking towards you is such, that I trust in time to come, your selfe will iudge me worthy, for my well deseruing seale, to haue deserued hire. Souldiours are seldome seene (quoth Mistres Dorithy) to marche vnder the banner of Venus, but whatsoeuer you be, doe you thinke to ouerthrow my vertues, with the assault of your wanton perswasions, or would you make me beleeue that you loue me as you say, when you haue no more respect to the hurt of my soule: Gentlewoman (quoth the Souldiour) I am not able to encounter you with words, because it hath not béene my profession, nor training vp, but if you doubt of my loue & good liking. Please it you to make triall, command any thing that your selfe shall thinke requisite, which if I doe not performe to the vttermost, then esteeme my loue indeed to be but feined, and where you thinke that I goe about to séeke the preiudice or hurt of your soule, beleeue me I neuer meant it.

Mistres Dorothie, who had béene well acquainted before with many suiters, had neuer béene apposed with such a rough hewen fellow, that was so blunt and plaine, aswell in his gesture, as in his termes: Began to thinke with her selfe that he might well be a Souldiour, for she knew that they had little skill in the courting of Gentlewomen, yet she perceiued by his countenance, the vehemencie of the Loue he bare vnto her, & perceiuing his plainnesse, she began to thinke him more fitter for her yet, then either Maister Doctor, or Maister Lawyer: that could not be contented the one with the other, when she gaue them both so much as they could craue, and therefore thinking with her selfe, that to lose any longer time were but a point of follie, taking the Souldiour by the hand, she lead him vp into a chamber, where other speeches were passed betweene them in secret, which I could neuer yet vnderstand, and what they did farther when they were by themselues, gentlewomen I pray gesse you, but this I must aduertise you of, that before they came forth of the chamber againe, the Souldiour had pleased

Mistresse Doritie so well, that both Maister Doctor, and Maister Lawyer, were put quite out of conceipt, so that from that time forwards when they came of their visitation, the gentlewoman was not well at ease, or shee had company with her, or shee was not at home, that they could no more speake with her: which turned the both into a wonderful agonie. The Doctor had thought she had forsaken him for the love of the Lawyer: The Lawyer hee thought almuch by the Doctor, that in the end not knowing otherwise how to spit out their venyme against her, they devised each of them a letter, which they sent her. The skill of these letters delivered unto her, came from the Doctor, which letter he left unpointed of purpose, because that in the reading of it, it might be pointed two wayes, and made to séeme either to her praise or dispraise, but Mistres Doritie her selfe in the reading of it, pointed it as I have set it down, and followeth in this sort.

And who would have thought mistres Dorotie, that for the loving advertisements given you by your friend, you could so lightly have shake him off, if I burdened you with any thing that might seeme grievous unto you, thinke it was Love that ledde me unto it, for that I protest inwardly in my minde, I never did esteeme you otherwise then for as honest a Gentlewoman as lives this day in Wydewell, I have heard say some have bin scourged more upon evill will, then for any deserts wherewith they might iustly be accused, so if it be my happe to suffer undeserved penance, I must impute it to my owne misfortune, but yet contrary to my expectation, considering how I have ever taken you to bee given in your conditions to practise unseemely, filthy, and detestable things: I know you have ever abhorred to live chastly, decently, and orderly: you have ever bene trained up to be wanton, proud, and incontinent: you never tooke delight in that was good, honest, or commendable: you wholy gave your selfe to lewdenesse, lust, and lechery: you were an open enemie to vertue: a freind to vice. What should I say, I doe but waste the time in the setting of you forth, and therefore will leave you like as I found you.

This letter brought Mistres Doritie into such a furie when she had perused it, that she sware by no Beggers she would be so revenged upon the Doctor, that she would make him a spectacle to all the Phititions in the world, how they should abuse an honest Gentlewoman while they lived. And in the middest of her Melancho-

lie

lie, her dearest friend the Sondolour happened to come in, whom she made partaker of all her secrets, shewing him the letter which Maister Doctor had sent her: and as they were deuising how to vse reuengement, a messenger was knocking at the doore, to deliuer a letter from the lawyer, the tenure wherof followeth in this maner.

Pay this bee the reward of my true and faithfull Loue, which so firmely I haue borne thee? O is this the delight of thy dalliance, which so many times thou hast vsed with me? So carelesly to shake me off, as though I had committed some notable abuse, when indeed I haue loued thee a great deale more, then I perceiue thou art worthy of. Oh feminine flattery, O fained fawning, O counterfect courtesie, O deepe dissimulation! But what hope is otherwise to be looked for, in these Kites of Cressides kinde. O what constancie may any man thinke to finde in a woman? No no, if a man may generally speake of their sexe, you shall neuer find them but counterfect in their courtesie, fained in their friendship, dissembling in their deedes, and in all their actions most daungerous, for men to deale withall: For if they haue a faire face, it is euer matched with a cruell heart, their heauenly lookes with hellish thoughts: their modest countenances, with mercilesse mindes: they haue wit, but it is in wilies, if they loue, it is too vehement: when they hate it is to the death. But good God, with how many sopperies are they accustomed to feed fooles, I meane such as be louemakers and suters vnto them, whom they delay with as many denises, as they bée in number that séeke to serue them. Some they lure with lookes, some they practise with promises: some they féede with flattery: some they delaye with dalliance: some they wind in with wiles: some they keepe with billes: some they diet with dissimulation. One must weare her gloue, an other must weare her garter, an other must weare her Colours: an other shal weare the spoile of as much as she can get from all the rest by conseuage, and yet to see how dainty these darlinges, will séeme to those that be not acquainted with their customes, were able to daſh a yong man out of countenance: I warrant you, they con make it more nice then wise: more cope then comely, more fine then honest. And to whom doe they make the matter most daungerous, but to them that deserueth best to be rewarded: for where they sée a man that is drowned in affection towards them, ouer him they will triumph, & can tell how to ride the foole without a snaffle: one while they will crosse him with froward language, then againe

comfort him with some kinde looke.

Now she driues him into desperation with frowning faces, by and by she baites him againe with banquets of vncertaine hope, such is their euill nature (as I say) that they will shew themselues most squeamish and dainty, to him that loues them most entirely, and him that seekes them least dishonestly, him they rewarde with their coldest courtesie. For better proofe, let a man seeke to winne one of these tender peeces, that goes for a maide, honestly, and in the way of marriage, and I warrant you she will make the matter more coy and nise to him that meanes good earnest, then to an other that comes but to trie and proue them. And what signes of shamefastnesse will they seeme to make, when a man doeth but touch them: faining themselues to be two yong, when (indeede) if they once past the age of fiftene yeares (if they were not a feard of breeding of bugges in their belly) by their good wills they would neuer be without the company of a man. Thus to conclud their nature is openly to scorne all men, be their loues neuer so honest, and secretly to refuse no man be his lust neuer so lewde. Full aptly did Salomon in his Prouerbes compare you to Wine, that can make vs so drunken with your deuises, that notwithstanding we see the snares with our eies, which you haue set to intangle vs, wee can not shunne the baite, which wee know will breed our bane. Thus much Mistres Doritie I haue thought good to signifie vnto you, whose discourtesie at this time hath caused me so generally to enuey against your whole sexe, not otherwise minding to accuse your selfe particularly, knowing that if you should otherwise haue vsed me then you haue, you should haue digressed and swarued quite from your kinde, and so I leaue you.

Gentlewomen I beseech you forgiue me my fault, in the publishing this infamous letter, I promise you I doe but signifie it according to the coppie, which this vnhappy Lawyer sent to Mistresse Doritie, and when I had well considered the blasphemy that he had vsed against your sexe, I cutte my pen all to peeces, where with I did coppy it out, and if it had not beene for the hurting of my selfe, I promise you I would haue cut and mangled my owne fingers wherewith I held the penne when I was writting of it: and trust me according to my skill, I could well haue founde in my heart, to encountered him with an answer in your defence, but then I was interrupted by an other as you shall well perceiue. For the vouch-

our

our, which you haue heard spoken of, that was remaining with Mistres Dorine, when he had perused this letter was put into a wonderfull chafe, and in the middest of his fury he vttered these wordes.

Ah most vile and blasphemous beast, what art thou that with such exclamations, goest about to defame those whom by all honest humanity and manhood, we bée willed specially to loue, honour, and reuerence, what art thou? A man, a deuill, or a subtill Lawyer, yea surely, and so thou maiest well be, and herein hast thou shewed thy selfe no whit at all to digresse from thy profession. For as at the first the Lawes were constituted to minister iustice, and to giue euery one his right, so now are they made by the practise of a nomber of Petty foggers, the instruments of all iniquity and wrong. Euen so that worthy sexe which at the first were giuen vnto man by the Almighty God himselfe, to bée his chiefest comfort and consolation. Sée here the practise of a wicked caitife, who with his eloquence would perswade vs, that they were our greatest ruine and desolations: Ah wicked wretch that thou art, how thinkest thou to escape, thus to blow forth thy blasphemy, against those blessed ones, whom God hath perfited aboue all other creatures. For at their first creation, they were made of the best & most purified mettal of man, where man himselfe was framed but of slime and drosse: what reason then that being at the first framed most pure and perfect creatures, but that they should continue their first perfection to the ende of the world. And like as at the first they were made more excellent then man, where should we now séeke for grace, vertue, and goodnesse, but onely in the feminine sexe, according to their singuler creation.

I trust this is so euident that there is no man able to denie it, & enough to proue, that as women at the first were created most perfecte, so they haue still remained the storehouse of all grace vertue and goodnesse, and that if there be any thing founde in vs men that is worthy of commendation, we are onely to giue thankes to women from whom we receiue it, as being descended from out their entrailes: but with how great and manifolde miseries, should wée men be daily afflicted, were it not for the comfort we finde at womens hands, for besides that by their industrie we be netified, made more clendly, and kept sweete, who otherwise of our selues wée should become to bée most filthy and loathsome creatures, so at all times and seasons they bee so necessarye and conuenient about vs,

that

that it were impossible for vs to be without their blessed companies. First, in our health they content vs with their familiarity, in our sickenesse they cherish vs, in our misery they make it more abound, in sorrow their company doth beguile our pensiue thoughts, in pleasure they be our chiefe delights, in paine their presence bredeth comfort to our griefe, in wealth what greater treasure then to enioy our beloued, in want what greater wealth then a loving and faithfull wife, in peace we labour still to get their liking, in warres they make vs shew our selues more valiant: but how is it possible that women should behaue themselues, but that there are some will finde fault with them: first, if she be familiar, we iudge her to be light, if she seeme any thing strange in her conuersation, ah we say she is a dangerous Dame, if merry, we thinke her to be naught, if sad, we say she is more graue then honest, if she be talkatiue, we say she is a tatling huswife, if silent, we say she is a sheepe, if cleanly in her apparrell, we say she is proud: if plaine or homely, we say she is a dowdie or a slat, if they deny vs their courtesie when we sue vnto them, we say they be cruell Tygers, Beares, and Buggers, if they haue compassion of vs, we discreet them amongst our companions.

But see here the cunning of a Caitife, that would wrest the words of Salomon to the dispraise of women, because in his Prouerbes he compareth them to Wine, but to interpret the words of Salomon by Salomon himselfe: in another place of the same Prouerbes, he willeth Wine should be giuen to comfort those that be feeble and weake: now compare these places together, and see what harme he hath done to women, and in my opinion, he could not more aptly haue made a comparison, for as Wine is a comfort to those that are feeble and weake, so are women our greatest solace, both in sickenesse and in health: but if any will say that Wine maketh vs drunken, and from reasonable men to become more brute then beasts. I answer, that the fault is not to be imputed to the Wine, but to the beastlinesse of him that taketh more then enough, for there is nothing so precious for our behoofes, but by our owne abuse we make it seeme most vile and loathsome, and thus granting maister Lawyer his comparison to be true, he hath done little hurt, sauing he hath shewed himselfe a diligent Scholler to his Maister the Deuill, who is father of all lyes, in maintaining so manifest a lye against such harmelesse creatures.

There

There where many other speeches pronounced by this Souldiour in the behaulfe of women, which I haue forgot to reeite. But I pray gentlewomen how like you by this Souldiour, dos you not thinke him worthy a Sarieants fee for his aunswere: in my opinion, you ought to loue Souldiours the better for his sake.

But to returne to Mistres Doritie, those two letters had so bereed her, that there was nothing in her minde but how she might be reuenged. Her friende the Souldiour promised for her sake, that he would so cudgill both Maister Doctor and the Lawier, that they should not in one moneth after be able to lift their armes to their heads, saying he will not how to get them into a place conuenient, for that it was daungerous to deale with them in the open streates. Mistres Doritie giuing him twenty kisses for his courtesie, told him she would deuise to bring them into some place where he might worke his will.

Presently after, Mistres Doritie sent for Maister Doctor, whom she knewe very well how to handle, and in a milde maner shee began greatly to blame him, that being wise as she knewe him to be, would so rashly iudge of her, for that he might well knowe that that there was some greate cause, that moued her to vse him as shee had done, otherwise then hee had coniectured: and thus with many other like speeches, she so smoothed the matter with Maister Doctor, that shee made him beleeue her husband had some sulpition in their familiaritie, and that by his commaundement shee had abstained his companie for a time, the which (Maister Doctor quoth shee) I did for no euill will that I beare you, but for a time to bleare my husbands eyes, thinking in the end so to haue handled the matter, that we might haue continued our accustomed friendship without any manner of sulpition. And then drawing forth the letter, which the Doctor had sent her (she said) But see maister Doctor your good opinion conceiued in me, loe, here the reward that I haue for my courtesie bestowed on you, thus to raile and rage against me, as though I were the moste notable strumpet in a countrey.

The Doctour knowyng in what forme he had writte the Letter, and desirous againe to renue his late acquintaunce, aunswered, that he neuer writte Letter vnto her, whereby he had giuen any occasion for her to take any griefe. No haue? (quoth Mistres Doritie) read you then here your owne lines, taking him the Letter,

which the Doctor as I told you before, had left unpointed and therfore in the reading, he pointed it after this manner.

And who would haue thought (Mistres Dorithie) that for the louing aduertisements giuen you by your friend, you could so lightly haue shaken him off, if I burdened you with any thing, that might seeme grieuous vnto you, thinke it was loue that leade me vnto it, for that I protest inwardly in my minde, I did neuer esteeme you otherwise, then for as honest a Gentlewoman as liues this day. In Bridewell I haue heard say, some haue beene scourged more vpon ruill will, then for any deserts whereof they might iustly be accused: so if it be my hap to suffer vndeserued penance, I must impute it to mine owne misfortune, but yet contrarie to my expectation, considering how I haue euer taken you to be giuen in your conditions: to practise vnseemely, filthy and detestable things, I know you haue euer abhorred: To liue chastly, decently, and orderly, you haue euer been trained vp: to be wanton, proud, and incontinent, you neuer tooke delight: in that was good, honest or commendable, you wholy gaue your self: to lewdnesse, lust, and lecherie, you were an open enemie, to vertue a friend. to vice: what should I say, I do but waste the time in the setting of you forth, and therefore will leaue you like as I found you.

I pray you Mistris Dorithy (quoth the Doctor) where is this railing and raging you speake of, I trust I haue written nothing that might discontent you. Mistresse Dorithie perceiuing the knauerie of the Doctor, and seeing the matter fell out so fit for her purpose: first giuing him a friendly buffe she sayd. Alas my deare friend, I confesse I haue trespassed in misconstering of your lines: But forgiue me I pray you, and now haue compassion of her, whose loue toward you is such, that it is impossible for me to liue, without your good liking, and seeing that my husbands Iealousie is so much, that you can haue no longer accesse to my house, but it must néeds come to his eare, by such spie and watch as he hath laide, neither my selfe can goe abroade to any place, but I am dogged, and followed by such as he hath appointed: But now if your loue be but halfe so much towards me, as I trust I haue deserued, and hereafter doe meane to requite. I haue alreadie deuised a meane, how for euer I might enioye my desired friend, without eyther let or molestation of any one, seeme he neuer so much to be offended at the matter.

The Doctor the gladdest man in the world to heare these newes, amasing

aunswered: And what is it then that should make you stagger, or doubt of the friendship of your louing Doctor, no not if thereby I should hazard the losse both of life and goodes.

Alas (quoth Mistresse Doritie) God defende I should worke you so great a preiudice, and I beseeche you vse no more such speeches vnto me, that I should goe about to put you into any such perill, the remembrance whereof is more grieuous vnto me, then if I had felte the force of a thousand deathes, and now behold my determination, and what I haue deuised: You haue a house not farre hence standyng in the fieldes, which you kéepe for your solace, and recreation in the time of Sommer: To this house I haue deuised, how you may so secretly conueigh me, that you may there keepe me at your pleasure to your owne vse, and to my great contentation, where I maie at pleasure inioye him more dearely beloued vnto me, then the baales of mine owne eyes. And here withall she gaue him an other Iudas kisse, that the Doctor desired her of all friendship, not to bée long in her determination, for that he was readie to followe her direction, when soeuer it would please her to commaunde: yea, if it were presently he was readie.

Mistres Doritie, who had driuen the matter to that passe she loked for, saied: Maie Maister Doctor, there resteth yet another thing, my husbandes Iealousie (as I told you) is such, that there must bee great circumspection vsed, in the conueighing of me away, & therefore giue care to that I haue deuised: I haue in my house a certaine Male with stuffe, that is left with me to be sent by the Carriers into the Countrie, wherof my husbande doth knowe verie well, this stuffe, I will cause to bée secretly taken forth, and to be sent to the carriers truss vp in some other thing, without any knowledge to any, sauing to my Maide, that shall worke this feate her selfe, whose trustinesse I knowe to bee such, as there is no suspition to be had in the matter, the which when she hath done, she shall trusse vp me in the same Male, then see that you faile not to morowe in the Euening about eight of the Clocke, disguised in a Porters weede, to come to my house to enquire for the same Male which you shall saie, you will beare to the carriers, my Maide who shall of purpose bée ready to waite for your comming at the houre, shall make no bones to deliuer you this Male, and thus without either doubte or Iealousie of any one, you maie carrie me into the fieldes, where for your better ease you may take me forth,

and disgalling our selues we may walke together, to your house aforesayd, where I may remaine without any manner of suspition, or knowledge to any, so long as it shall please your selfe.

O most excellent deuise (quoth the Doctor) I haue this matter already at my fingers ends, & I warrant you, you shall see me play the Porter so cunningly, that how many so euer I méete, there shall none of them be able to suspect me: Thus with a fained kisse that she againe bestowed of him, for that time they departed.

Mistresse Dorithie, in like manner sent for the Lawyer, whom she handeled in like sort, as she had done the Doctor, making him beléeue, that her husbands Iealousie was such, as she durst no more come in his companie: But of her selfe she loued him so entirely, that she would hazard any thing for his sake, and because he should the better beléeue it, to morrow (quoth she) in the afternoone my husband will be forth of the doores, wherefore I pray you faile not about three of the Cloche, to come and visite me, when we shall haue leisure to dispute our selues, to our better contentation: many like enticing words she vsed, which so perswaded the Lawyer, then dreading no bad measure at all, he promised her not to faile, but he would kéepe his houre: And thus departed very ioyfull, that he had againe recouered his Mistresse. And the next day, euen as it had stroke three of the Clock, he was knocking at the doore of this Gentlewoman, who loking for his comming, was ready to receiue him, and vp they goe together to a chamber, which she had appointed for the purpose: where for a time she dallied him off with deuises: and sodainly her maide (according as her Mistresse had giuen her instructions) came hastily to the Chamber doore, calling her Mistres, saying: that her Maister was come in, and had asked for her: Mistresse Dorithie, who was not to learne to play her part, séemed to be striken into a wonderfull feare, alas (quoth she to the Lawyer) for the loue of God kéepe your selfe secret for a time, that I may goe downe and ride him away, if it be possible, and thus going her way downe, she shuts the doore after her.

The Lawyer who was ready to betray him selfe for feare, crept vnder the bed, where she let him alone the space of an houre, and then comming vp into the chamber, and could not sée him, she began to muse what was become of him, he hearing one was come in at the Chamber doore, began to pry out vnder the beds féete, and perceiuing by the skirt of her Gowne who it was, with a faint voyce he

he said: alas my deare what newes, is your husband gone? Ah my louing friend (quoth she) I was neuer so hardly beset since I was borne, my husband is come home with three or foure of his friends, which he met withall in the Citie, and he come out of the Country of purpose, to make merry with him, and here they be appointed this night to Sup, and hether be come to their beds, so long as they remaine in the Citie, and this Chamber is appointed for two of them to lye in, that for my life I know not what shift to make, nor how to conueigh you hence.

Alas (quoth the Lawyer) then am I vtterly vndone, for the loue of God, deuise some meanes to conueigh me out of the house, for I would not remaine all night in this perplexitie, no not for all the golde in the world. Mistresse Dorithie making a little pause, sodainlie as though she had an invention, but euen then come into her head, she sayd,

I haue this onely remedie left, here is in the house a Pale full of stuffe, which should this night be sent to the Carriers: my deuise is therefore to take forth the stuffe, and lay it aside till sometime the next weeke, when I will make shift to send the stuffe away very well, and you shall be presently packed vp in this Pale, which my maide shall do while I am below with my husband and his friends, and so causing a Porter to be sent for, he shall carrie you to your Chamber, or to any other place where it shall please your selfe, so that my husband seeing this Pale goe forth of doores, will thinke it is the stuffe, which he knoweth this night should be sent.

No better deuise in the world (quoth the Lawier) and let the Porter conueigh this Pale to my Chamber, you know where, and deliuer it to my man, as sent from his Maister, and will him to giue him fortie pence for his labour.

The matter thus determined, mistresse Dorithy sent vp her maide with this emptie Pale, wherein she trussed vp the Lawyer, & there she left him lying from fiue of the cloche, vntill it was paste eight, & in the Sommer season the weather being very hotte, the Lawyer had like to haue bene smothered where he lay, at the length according to appointment, comes maister Doctor disguised like a right Porter, with a long gaberdine downe to the calfe of his legges, and he enquires for a Pale that should goe to the Carriers, yea marry (quoth the maide) if you please to come in, it is ready for you, the Doctor being a good sturdie lubber, toke vp the Pale very easily

for feare of bruising the Gentlewomans tender ribbes, whom he had thought he had vpon his backe, and thus forth of doores he goes, taking the next way towardes his lodging.

Mistres Dorine with her beloued Souldiour (whom shee had made priuie to her deuise) stood where she might see maister Doctor in his Porters weede, going with his carriage, whereat when they had a while sported themselues, the Souldiour followed Maister Doctor an easie pace, but onely to keepe the sight of him, and the doctor he tooke his way through the streetes with a maine pase, till he had recouered the fields, where looking about him, to see what companie was stirring, saw no body neere him but the Souldiour whom he did not know, and then crossing the way from the common pathes, he came to the side of a bancke, and being weary (as hee was not to be blamed, considering the knauishe burden that he had borne vpon his backe) he laying downe the Male tenderly vpon the side of the bancke, seeing no bodie but the Souldiour, who was but a litttle distance from him. said. Ah my sweete Wench, I can see no creature stirring in all the fieldes, but one man which is comming this way, who so soone as hee is past, I will vndoe the Male.

The Lawyer in the Male, when he felt the Porter lay him down, was in a good hope that he had bin in his own chamber, but hearing by these speeches that he was in the fieldes, began to coniecture assuredly, that the Porter had spoken these words to some Woman that was in his company, with whom he was confederate, for the stealing of such things as they should finde in the Male, and that when they should open the Male and finde him there, they would not sticke to cutte his throate for feare least he should bewray them, and for the onely spoile of such things as he had about him, that the Lawyer was in such a perplexitie, that he wist not for his life what he might doe: one while he had thought to haue cried out for helpe, then he thought it would the sooner bring him to his ende, and as he continued thus in the middest of his muse, the Souldiour was come to the place, and speaking to the Doctor, he said: Porter it seemeth thou hast beene knauishly loden, for I perceiue thou art very hotte, but what hast thou in thy Male, I pray thee that thou art carrying this way so late in the euening.

Marry (quoth the Doctor) I haue ware there such as it is, hast thou ware knaue (quoth the Souldiour) is that a sufficient answere, what

what ware is it, mens ware, or womens ware. Sir I knowe not, (quoth the Porter) I haue but the carrying of it to a Gentlemans house that is here by, well (quoth the Souldier) vndoe your truſſe, for I will ſee what wares you haue there, before you and I depart why ſir (quoth the Porter) ſhould I be ſo bold to vndoe a Gentlemans Male, that is deliuered me in truſt to be carried, no ſir you ſhall pardon me, if you were my Father, and herewithall he tooke the Male vpon his backe, and began to goe his wayes. But the Souldiour knowing better what was in the Male, then the Porter himſelfe that carryed it, and being prouided for the purpoſe with a good Cudgell, let driue halfe a dozen blowes at the male, that laid vpon his backe ſo ſurely that the Lawyer cries out, alas alas, alas. Why Porter (quoth the Souldiour) haue you quick wares in your male, no marualle you were ſo dainty in the ſhewing of it.

Herewithall the Doctor laied downe his male, and kneeling downe to the Souldier ſaid. Ah ſir for the loue of God be content I will not let to confeſſe the whole truth vnto you: I haue a Gentlewoman in my male, which I haue ſtolen from her husband, and ſeeing you to be a Gentleman, but young in yeeres, and impoſſible but that you ſhould loue the companie of a faire woman, beholde I will deliuer her vnto you, to vſe at your pleaſure, and when you ſhall ſee time, to reſtore her vnto me againe, deſiring you ſir of all courteſie to ſeeke no other diſpleaſure againſt vs. You haue ſaid wel (quoth the Souldiour) but is ſhe ſuch a one as is to be liked, faire, freſh, and young. Truſt me ſir (quoth the Doctor) if ſhe be not as faire and well liking as any dame within the walles of this Citty, make me an example to all other, how they ſhall diſſemble with a Gentleman ſuch as you are. Thou ſaiſt well (quoth the Souldiour) and now I thinke long till I haue a ſight of this Paragon which thou haſt ſo praiſed vnto me. You ſhall ſee her ſtraight ſir, quoth the Doctor, and herewithall he began to vnlace the male with great expedition, which when hee had vnlooſed at the one end, that hee might come to the ſight of this Gentlewomans face (as he had thought) he ſaid to the ſouldiour, ſee here the ſight which you ſo much deſire, & pulling the ende of the male open with his handes, the Lawyer thruſt forth his head, & looked with ſuch a piteous countenance: as though he had bene ready to be tourned off the Ladder: But the Doctor ſeeing a face to appeare with a long beard, was in ſuch a maze that he could not tel in the world what he might ſay. The ſouldiour

who

who had neuer more adoe then to forbeare laughter, to see how these two, the one beheld the other: said to the Doctor, and is this the faire Gentlewoman which thou hast promised me, hast thou no body to mocke but me, that with such commendations thou giuest praise to a woman, whereby to set my teeth an edge, and then in the end thus to delude me? but I will teach thee how to plaie the knaue againe while thou liuest, and here withall he laied on with his Cudgell, sparing neither head, shoulders, armes, back nor breast, and so he bet-hailed the Doctor, that for the space of a quarter of a yeere after, he was not able to lift an Vrinall so high as his head.

The Lawyer who had nothing out of the Sale but his head, seeing this fray, struggled so much as he could, to haue got forth, and to haue run away, while the Porter was a beating, but it would not bee, his armes were so surely laced downe by his sides, that for his life he could not get them forth.

The Souldiour, when he had throughly requited Maister Doctors knauery, that he had vied against his beloued Mistres in his letter, left him, and began to bende himselfe towardes the Lawyer: The Lawyer seeing the Souldiour comming, had thought verily that he had bin some good fellow that was walking there so late, to haue taken some prey, said O sir for the loue of God spare my life, & take my purse, to whom the Souldiour answered: nay villaine, my comming is neither to take thy life nor thy purse, but to minister reuengement for thy large speeches, which like a discourteous wretch thou hast vied against a woman, and there withall laied vpon him so long as he was able to fetch any breath, and then calling the Porter vnto him he said: Let these words which I mind to speake suffice for a warning to you both, if euer I may learne that any of you hereafter this do vse any misdemeanure towardes any woman, either by word or writing, assure your selues that although I haue but dallied with you at this time, I will deuise some one meane or other to minister reuenge, that all such as you be, shall take an example by you. And thus I leaue you, going his way to his sweete heart, telling her the whole discourse how he had sped, by whom hee was welcommed with a whole lap of kisses &c.

And now to returne to those two that were left in the fields, as you haue heard: the Doctor taking good view of the Lawyer, knew him very well, but the Doctor was so disguised in his Porters apparell, that the Lawyer did not know him, but said vnto him

him, a miſchiefe light of all ſuch Porters, that when they be put in truſt with carriages into the Citie, will bring them into the fields to ſuch banquets as theſe: Sparrie quoth the Doctor, a miſchiefe take all ſuch burthens, that when a man hath almoſt broken his back with bearing them, and then ſhall receiue ſuch a recompence for his labour as I haue done: Villaine (quoth the Lawyer) why diddeſt thou not beare me to my Chamber as thou wert willed when thou diddeſt receiue me. I would I had caried thee to the gallowes (quoth the Doctor) ſo I had eſcaped this ſcouring, but I perceiue this banquet was prepared for vs both, and here withall with much adoe he got off the Porters coate, and making himſelfe knowne to the Lawyer, each of them conferred with the other, how cunningly they had been dealt withall, and did thinke it not beſt for them any farther to deale in the matter, for feare of farther miſchiefe, but with much ado got them home, where the Lawier kept his bed very long after: but the Doctor tooke Sparmeceti, and ſuch like things that be good for a braſe, and recouered himſelfe in a ſhort ſpace.

Now it fell out afterwards that this Souldiour, who liued in great credit with Piſtres Dorithie, (as he had well deſerued) was imployed in the Kings warres againſt forraine foes, with a great number of others, where he ſpent his life in his Princes quarrell, & Piſtres Dorothie. ſorrowing a long time the loſſe of ſo faithfull a friend, ſeeing the diuerſitie of men, that ſhe had made her choiſe amongſt theſe, and had found but one honeſt, feared to fall into any further infamie, contented her ſelfe to liue orderly, and faithfully with her husband, all the reſt of her life, and her husband who neuer vnderſtood any of theſe actions, loued her dearely to his dying day.

And now to ſay ſomething of the other brother & his wife, which as you haue heard was ſuch a notable ſcold, that her husband could neuer enioy good day, nor merry houre: She was ſuch a deuill of her tongue, and would ſo crosſebite him with ſuch taunts, & ſpightfull quips, as if at any time he had beene merrie in her company, ſhe would tell him his mirth proceeded rather in the remembrance of that ſhe had brought him, then for any loue that he had to her ſelfe, if he were ſad, it was for grieſe ſhe was not dead, that he might enioy that ſhe had. If he vſed to goe abroad, then he had been ſpending of that he neuer got himſelfe. If he tarried at home, ſhe would ſay it was happy he had gotten ſuch a wife, that was able to keepe him ſo idely. If he made any proviſion for good cheare, or to ſare

well in his house, she would bid him spend that which he himself had brought. If he shewed himselfe to be sparing, then she would not pinche of that which was her owne. Thus doe what he could, all that euer he did was taken in the worst part: seeing that by no maner of faire meanes he was able to reclaime her. In the end he deuised this way, himselfe with a trustie friend that he made of his counsaile got & pinnioned her armes so fast, that she was not able to vndo them, & then putting her into an old Petticoate, which he rent and tattered in peeces of purpose, and shaking her haire lose about her eyes, tare her smock sleeues that her armes were all bare, & scratching them all ouer with a Bramble that the blood followed, with a great chaine about her leg, wherewith he tied her in a darke house that was on his backside, & then calling his neighbours about her, he would seeme with great sorrow to lament his wiues distresse, telling them that she was sodainly become Lunatick, whereas by his gesture he toke so great griefe, as though he would likewise haue run mad for company. But his wife (as he had attired her) seemed (in deed) not to be well in her wits, but seeing her husbands maners, shewed her selfe in her conditions to be a right Bedlem: she vsed no other words but cursings & bannings, crying for the plague and the pestilence, & that the deuill would teare her husband in peeces, the company that were about her, they would exhort her, good neighbour forget these idle speeches, which doth so much distemper you: and call vpon God and he will surely helpe you. Call vpon God for helpe (quoth the other) wherein should he helpe me, vnlesse he would consume this wretch with fire and brimstone, other helpe I haue no need of. Her husband he desired his neighbours for Gods loue that they would helpe him to pray for her, and thus altogether kneeling downe in her presence, he began to say (Miserere) which all they said after him, but this did so spight and vexe her, that she neuer gaue ouer her railing and raging against them all. But in the end, her husband who by this shame had thought to haue reclaimed her, made her to become from euill to worse, and was glad himselfe in the end, cleane to leaue, and to get himselfe from her into a strange Countrey, where he consumed the rest of his life.

Thus to conclude, besides the matter that I meane to proue, men may gather example here, when they go a wiuing, not to chuse for beautie without vertue: nor for riches without good conditions. There be other examples if they be well marked, worth ỹ learning: both for men & women, which I leaue to the discretion of the reader.

The

Of Gonſales and his vertuous wife Agatha.

The argument of the ſixt Hiſtorie.

¶ Gonſales, *pretending to poiſon his vertuous wife for the loue of a Courtizan, craued the helpe of* Alonſo, *a Scholer ſomething practiſed in Phiſicke, who in the ſtead of poyſon gaue him a powder, which did but bring her in a ſound ſleepe during certaine howers, but* Gonſales *iudging (indeed) that his wife had beene dead, cauſed her immediatly to be buried. The Scholer againe knowing the operation of his powder, for the great loue he bare to* Agatha, *went to the vault where ſhe was entombed, about the houre that he knew ſhe ſhould awake. When after ſome ſpeeches vſed betweene them, he carried her home to his owne houſe, where ſhe remained for a ſpace: in the meane time* Gonſales *being married to his Courtizan, was by her accuſed to the Gouernour for the poyſoning of his firſt wife, whereof being apprehended, he confeſſed the fact, and was therefore iudged to dye, which being knowne to* Agatha, *ſhe came to the Iudge, and clearing her husband of the crime, they liued together in perfect peace and amitie.*

THere was ſome time in the Cittie of Siuille in Spaine, a Gentleman named Gonſales, who though hee were a man of yeares ſufficient to bee ſtayed, and to giue ouer the wanton pranckes of youthfull follie. Yet was he by Nature ſo enclined to follow his lusts, and withall ſo variable and ſo vnconſtant, that he ſuffered himſelfe to be ruled wholy by his paſſions, and meaſured all his doing rather by his delights & pleaſures, then by ſound diſcourſe and rule of reaſon. This Gentleman falling in loue with a Gentlewoma of the ſaid Citty whoſe name was Agatha, ſought all the meanes he could to haue her to wife. And her friends although they

They were well enough reformed of the disposition of Gonsales, whereby they might haue feared the intreaty of their kinswoman, for that they knew him very rich, and her dowrie not to bee very great, they were wel content to bestow her vpon him: and thought that they had in so doing placed her very well. But before the first yeere after their Marriage was fully expired, Gonsales following his wonted humour, and waxing wearie of loue, grewe to desire change, giuing thereby a notable example for women to learne how little it is to their commodity or quiet, to match themselues to such that be rather rich then wise: and how much it were better for them to be married to men then to their goodes.

For being come to sojourne in that Strea wherin hée dwelt, a notable Courtesane, who to the outward shew was very faire, though inwardly she was most foule, as she that vnder a godly personage, did couer a wicked and danngerous minde, corrupted with all vices (as for the most part all such women done) It was Gonsales chaunce to be one of the first that fell into those snares, which she had set for such simple mens mindes, as haunt after the exteriour apperance of those things, which their sences make them to delight in, and not considering the daunger where vnto they commit themselues, by following of their disordinate appetites, doe suffer themselues, to be entrapped by such lewde Dames: Among which this (forsoth) was one that was of singular skill to captiue mens minds which by experience and by the naturall disposition of her minde, bent wholy to deceipt and naughtinesse: Had learned a thousand giles and artes, which way to allure men with the pleasaun nesse of her baits. Wherefore after he was once entangled with her snares, he fell so farre beyond all reason, and past all beleefe, to doate vpon, this Strumpet that he could finde no rest, nor no contentment, but so long as he was with her. But she being as desolute a Dame as any liued in the world, & as greedy likewise of gaine as euer any was of her profession would not content her selfe with Gonsales alone, but yeelded vnto as many as list to inioy her, if they came with their hands full, & spared for no cost to reward her liberaly. Which thing was vnto him, that was so beloued of her, so grieuous and to intollerable, that nothing could be more.

There was at that same time, a Scholler in the Citty that studied Phisicke, with whom Gonsales had familiar acquaintance, & the scholler thereby hauing accesse and conuersation in his house

beganne

began so fervently to be in loue with Agatha his wife, that he desi-
red nothing so earnestly in the world as to enioy her, and to winne
her goodwill. Wherefore having (as I haue said) free accesse to her
house, and to declare his affection vnto her without suspition, he ceas-
ed not by all the meanes he was able to deuise, to solicite & to pro-
cure her to yéeld vnto his desire. With his endeuour and earnest
suite although it were vnto Agatha noysome and displeasant, as she
that was disposed to kéepe her selfe honest: and that she could in
that respect haue béen very glad, that he would forbeare to frequent
her house. Yet knowing her husband to be a man of no very great
substance, and but slenderly stuffed in the head péece: and that he
delighted greatly in the familiaritie of the Scholler, she forced her
selfe to endure with patience, the importunate molestation, which
he still wearied her withall. Taking from him neuertheless all
hope, to obtaine at any time any fauour at her hands, and cutting
him shorte from all occasions, as much as she could, whereby he
might haue cause eyther to molest her, or to looke for any thing to
procéed from her, that were lesse then honest.

The Scholer perceiuing that his owne trauaile, to winne her af-
fection was but labour lost, thought best to trie if by the allurement
or perswasion of any other, he might happily moue her to shew her
selfe more courteous, and fauourable vnto him. Wherefore hauing
found out an olde mother Elenour, a disciple of the Spanish Cele-
stina, such a one as was most cunning and skilfull in mollifying
of womens mindes, to worke them afterward to receiue the im-
pressions of their louers, he caused her to take acquaintance of Aga-
tha, and by degrées (as though she had béene moued with pittie &
compassion of her case) to declare vnto her the loue which her hus-
band bare vnto the Curtisane: and to shew her how vnworthy he
was that she should be true vnto him. And in the end falling from
one speach to another, she sayd plainly vnto her, that it was a great
follie, since her husband did take his pleasures abroad with other
women, to stand to his allowances, and to take the leauing of his
Strumpets, and therewith to be content: and that, if she were in
her case, and had a husband that would strike with the swoorde, she
would vndoubtedly requite him and strike with the scabberd, so she
counselled her to doe likewise.

Agatha being a very discréet Gentlewoman, and louing her hus-
band as an honest woman ought to doe, sayde to her in answer

of her talke, that she would bée right glad to sée her husband to bée such a man as she wished him to be, and as he ought to bee. But that since she saw it would not be, and that he could not frame himselfe therto, she would not take from him or barre him of that liberty, which either the custome of the corrupted world, or the priuiledge that men had vsurped vnto themselues, had giuen vnto them. And that she would neuer for her part violate or breake that faith which she had giuen him, nor slacke or neglect that care and regarde of her honour which all women by kind and nature ought to haue, as the thing that maketh them to be most cõmended throughout the world, let her husband do what he list, & like & loue as many other women as pleased him. And ỳ she thought her selfe so much the rather bound so to do, because he did not in the rest misuse her any way, or sutter her to want any thing that reasonably shee could desire or craue at his handes: & for that she had not brought him in effect any other dowrie worthie to be accompted of then her honestie. Wher fore she was fully resolued neuer to vary from that constant resolution. And finally shewing her selfe somewhat moued & stirred with choller, she told her that she marualled at her not a little (that being a woman of those yéres) that she should rather reprehend and chide young folke, if she should sée them so bent, then encourage them to euill, & mused much she could finde in her heart to giue her such counsell: which she assured her was so displeasant and so vngrateful, as if from henceforth she durst presume to speake thereof any more, shée would make her vnderstand perchance to her smart, how ill she could away with such panderly practises.

This old bagge hauing had her head washed thus without Sope, departed from Agatha, and came vnto the Scholler and told him in briefe how ill shee had speed, and in what sort the honest Gentlewoman had closed her mouth, whereof the Scholler was very sorry: yet for all this, he thought he would not giue ouer his pursuite, imagining that there is no heart so hard or flinty, but by long loue, by perseuerance, praier, and teares, may in the end be mollified and wrought to be tender.

In this meane season, Gonsales still continuing his old familiarity with the Scholler, hauing made him priuie of the loue hée bare vnto the Courtisane, and what a griefe it was vnto him to sée her enioyed by any other then by himselfe: one day among other talke betwéene them of that matter, he said vnto the Scholler that it

neuer

neuer grieued him so much to haue a wife as it did then, for that if he had bin vnmarried he would haue taken Aselgia (for so was the Courtisane named) to be his wife, without whom hee could finde no rest nor quiete in mind, and so long as euery man hath a share with him in her, he accompted himselfe as ill as if he had no parte in her at all. And thereto saide further, that assuredly if it were not for feare of the Lawe, he would ease himselfe of that burden by ridding of Agatha out of the world. Thereunto replied the Scholer saing that in deede it was a grieuous thing for a Gentleman to be combred with a wife, whom he could not finde in his heart to loue, and that in such a case, he that did seeke the best way he could to deliuer him selfe of that yoke, was not altogether vnexcusable, though the rigor of Iustice had appointed seuere punishements, for such as violentlie should attempt, or execute any such thing. But that men that were wise, could well enough find out the meanes, which waie to worke their ententes, without incurring any daunger of the Lawe for the matter. Which language in deede he vsed vnto him, but to feede his humour, and to see whereunto that talke in fine would tende: And according to his desire before it was long. Gonsales hauing vsed the like speeches, two or three times, and still finding him to sooth his saiyng, tooke one daie a good heart vnto him, and brake his minde vnto the scholer at large and in plaine termes to this effecte.

Alonso (for that was the Scholers name) I doe assure my selfe and make full accompt, that thou art my faithfull friende, as I am thine, and I doubte not but that the friendship, which is betweene vs, doeth make thée no lesse sorie then my selfe, to see me greeue with this continuall trouble of minde, wherein I liue, because I can not compasse to take this woman whom I loue so dearly to bee my wife, and by that meanes come to haue the full possession of her vnto my selfe, which is the thing I doe desire aboue al other thinges in the world. And for as much as I doe perswade my selfe that by thy meanes, and with the helpe of thy profession, I may hap to finde some remedie for my griefe. I haue thought good to tel thee a conceit which I haue thought on often times: wherin I meane to vse thee and thy assistance, for the better accomplishing of my purpose, in that behalfe.

Assuring my selfe that thou wilt not refuse, or denie me any furtherance that thy skil may afford me, or shrinke and draw backe from the performing of any friendly offer, whereby I may come

by

by to finde some ease of minde, and be delyuered of that intollerable torment of spirit, wherewith I am oppressed, for the loue of this Aselgia in whom I haue fixed and sette all my hopes and delightes. Thou shalt therefore vnderstand that I am determined, as soone as I can possible, to ridde my hands of Agatha my wife, and by one meane or other to cause her to dye: And I haue beene this a good while about the execution of this my entent, but because I could neuer yet deuice the best way to performe it, so that her death might not bee laied vnto my charge. I haue delaied it hetherto, and perforce contente to beare the heauie burthen of my greeued minde till now, which hence forwarde I am resolued to beare no longer, if thou wilt according to my trust in thee, and as the friendship which is betweene vs doeth require (graunt me thy furtherance and helping hande. Wherefore, knowing that through thy long study in Phisicke thou hast attained so great knowledge, that thou canst deuise a number of secretes, whereof any one might bee sufficient to bring my purpose to effect. I doe require thee to fulfill my desire in that behalfe, and to giue me thy helpe to bring this my desire to passe: which if thou doe, I will acknowledge my selfe so long as I shall liue, to bee so much bound vnto thee, that thou shalt command me and all that I haue, in any occasion of thine, as freelie and as boldlie as thou maist now, any thing that is thine owne.

The scholler when had heard Gonsales and his demaund stoode still awhile, as musing vpon the request, and in the meane while discoursed with him selfe, how by the occasion of this entent, and resolution of Gonsales, he might perhappes finde out away to come by the possession of Agatha, and to haue her in his handes, and at his deuotion. But keeping secret his thoughtes and meaning, he made him aunswere: That true it was, that he wanted not secrete compassions, to make folke dye with poison, so as it could neuer bee discerned by any Phisition or other, whether the cause were violent, or no, but that for two respectes he thought it not good to yeeld vnto his request. The one, for that Phisicke & Phisitions were appointed in the world, not to bereaue men of their liues, but to preserue them and to cure them of such diseases, as were daungerous and perillous vnto them: The other because hee did foresee, in what ieoperdie he should put his owne life, whensoeuer he should dispose himselfe to worke any such practise, considering how seuerely the lawes haue prescribed punishmentes for such offences. And that it might fall out how warely soeuer the thing were

wrought,

wrought, that by some seldome or unlooked for accident, the matter might be discouered (as for the most part it seemeth that God will haue it) in which case he were like to encurre no lesse danger then Gonsales, and both (assured) without remission to lose their liues. And that therefore he would not for the first respect, take vpon him to doe that, which was contrarie to his profession: Nor for the second, hazard his life to so certaine a danger, for so hatefull a thing as those practises are to all the world.

Gonsales very sorie to heare his denial, told him that the Lawes and duties of friendship, doth dispence well enough with a man, though for his friend he straine sometime his conscience. And therefore, he hoped that he would not forsake him, in a cause that concerned him so weightilie as that did. And that neither of those two respects (if they were well considered) ought to be able to remoue him from pleasuring of his friend. For that now a dayes, aswell were they accompted and esteemed Phisitions, that killed their patients, as they that did cure them: and because the thing being kept secret betweene them two alone, he needed not to doubt or feare any danger of his life by the Lawe. For if it should by any mischance happen, that he should be imputed or burthened with poysoning his wife, he assured him that he would neuer whilest he had breath, confesse of whom he had the poison, but would rather suffer his tongue to be pulled out of his head, or endure any torment that might be deuised.

The Scholler at the last seeming to be wonne, by the earnestnesse of his petition: sayd, that vpon that condition and promisse, of not reuealing him at any time, he would be content rather to shew himselfe friendly vnto him, then a true professor of his Science, or an exact regarder of his conscience: and that he would doe as he would haue him.

And hauing left Gonsales very glad and ioyfull, for that his promise, he went home, and made a certaine composition of mixture of powders, the vertue whereof was such, that it would make them that toke any quantitie thereof, to sleepe so soundly that they should for the space of certaine howers seeme vnto all men, to be starke dead. And the next day he returned to Gonsales, and to deliuer it vnto him, saying: Gonsales, you haue caused me to doe a thing, I protest I would not doe it for my life: But since you may see thereby, that I haue regarded more your friendship, then my dutie, or the

conſideration of that which is honeſt and lawfull: I muſt require you eſtſoones to remember your promiſe, and that you will not declare to any creature liuing that you haue had this poiſon of me.

Which thing Gonſales very conſtantly vpon his othe did promiſe him againe and hauing taken the pouder of him, aſked him in what ſort he was to vſe it: And he tolde him, that if at Supper he did caſt it there vpon her meate, or into her broths, ſhe ſhould dye that night following, without either paine or torment, or any grieuous accidents, but goe away euen as though ſhe were a ſléepe. That euening at Supper time, Gonſales failed not to put the pouder into his wiues portage, who hauing taken it, aſſoone as Supper was done féeling her ſelfe very heauie and drouſie, went to her Chamber and gat her to bed, for ſhe lay not with Gonſales, but when he liſt to call her, which had béene very ſeldome, ſince he did fall into loue with the ſtrumpet, and within an houre after, the operation of the pouder, toke ſuch force in her body, that ſhe laye as though ſhe had béene dead, and altogether ſenceleſſe. Gonſales in like ſort when he ſawe his time went to his bed, and lying all that night with a troubled minde, thinking what would become of Agatha; and what ſucceſſe his enterpriſe would take, the Morning came vpon him before he could once cloſe his eyes, which béeing come he roſe, not doubting but that he ſhould aſſuredly finde his wife dead, as Alonſo had promiſed him. And aſ ſoone as he was vp, he went out of his houſe, and ſtaied but an houre abroad, and then he returned home againe, and aſked his Maide, whether her Miſtres were vp or no. The Maide made him anſwer, that ſhe was yet a ſléepe: and he making as though he had maruelled at her long lying in bed, demanded her how it happened that ſhe was ſo ſluggiſh that morning, contrary to her cuſtome, which was to riſe euery morning by breake of the day, and bad her goe & awake her, for he would haue her to giue him ſome thing that lay vnder her knees. The wench according to her Maiſters commandement, went to her Miſtres bed ſide, and hauing called her once or twiſe ſomewhat ſoftely, when ſhe ſawe ſhe waked not, ſhe layed her hand vpon her, and giuing her a thagge, ſhe ſayd withall, Miſtreſſe awake, my Maiſter calleth for you. But ſhe lying ſtill, and not awaking for all that the Maide toke her by the arme, and began to ſhake her good and hard; and ſhe notwithſtanding, neither anſwering, nor ſtirring hand or foote, The Maide returned to her Maiſter,

and

and told him that for aught she could doe, she could not get her Mistres to awake. Gonsales hearing the maide to say so, was glad in his minde. But faining himselfe to be busied about somewhat else, and that he regarded little her speech, he bid her goe againe, and shake her till she did waken. The Maide did so, and roled and tumbled her in her bed, and all in vaine: Wherefore comming againe vnto her maister, she said vnto him, that vndoubtedly shee did believe, that her Mistres his wife was dead, for shee had founde her verie colde and roled her vp and downe the bedde, and that yet she stirred not. What, dead quoth Gonsales, as if he had beene all agast & amazed, and rising therewithall, he went to her bed side, & called her, & shaked her, and wrong her by the fingers and did all that might bee, as he thought, to see whether she were alive: but she not feeling any thing that he did, laye still like a dead bodie, or rather like a stone.

Wherefore when he saw his purpose had taken so good effect, to dissemble the matter, he beganne to crie out, and to lament, and to detest his cruell destinie, that had so soone bereaued him of so kind, so honest, and so faithfull a wife: and hauing in the end discouered her body, and finding no spot or marke, whereby any token or signe of poisoning might be gathered, as one that would not seeme to omit anye office of a louing husband, he sent for the Phisition to looke vpon her, who hauing vsed some such meanes, as he thought meete to make her come to her selfe: finally seeing her to remaine vnmoueable, & without sense, concluded, that some sodaine accident had taken her in the night, wherevpon she had died and so dead he left her.

At which his resolution, though Gonsales were very glad, yet to the outward shewe declaring himselfe to be very sorry, and full of woe and heauinesse, he behaued himselfe in such cunning sort, as he made all the world beleeue, that he would not long liue after her. And hauing called her friends, and lamented with them her sodaine death and his misfortune: In fine, he caused her Funerall to be very sumptuously and honourably prepared, and buried her in a Vaute, which serued for a Tombe to all his auncestors, in a Church of a Frierie, that stands without the Citty.

Alonso that was very well acquainted with the place, and had himselfe a house not very far frō that Friery, went his way that same Night vnto his said house, and when he saw the time to serue for his purpose, he gatte him to the Vaute or Toumbe wherein Agatha

was laid, with one of these little Lanthornes, that they call blinde Lanthornes (because they turne them, and hide their light when they list.) And because he was a young man of very good strength and had brought with him instruments of iron to open the tombe, and lift vp the stone that couered it, he gatte it open, and hauing vnderp.opped it surely: he went into the vaute, and tooke the woman straightway in his armes, minding to bring her out, & carry her away to a steepe as she was. But the force and vertue of the powder, being finished and spent, alsoone as he moued her, shee awaked out of her sleepe, and seeing her selfe clad in that sort, among ragges and dead bones, she began to tremble, and to crie: Alas where am I? or who hath brought me hether, wretch that I am? Marie that hath your cruell and vnfaithfull husband, answered the Scholler: who hauing poisoned you, to marry a common Strumpet, hath buried you here, whether I come to trie if by my skill I could reuiue you, and call back your soule by those remedies, which I had deuised vnto your body againe: Which if I could not haue done, as I entended, I was resolued to haue died here by you, and to haue laid my dead body here by yours, to rest vntill the latter day, hoping that my spirit should in the meane while haue come and enioyed yours, where euer it had béene. But since the Heauens haue béene so fauourable vnto me, as in this cr'reame daunger wherein you were, to grant such vertue vnto the remedies, which I haue vsed toward you, as the which I haue bin able to kéepe vndissolued, your gentle Spirit with your faire body I hope (my deare) that you will henceforth consider, what the affection of your wicked husband hath bin toward you, and how great good will and by consideration therof, discerne and resolue which of vs two hath best deserued to be beloued of you.

Agatha finding her selfe in that sort buried indéede, did easily beleeue the truth which the Scholler told her, and to her selfe concluded, that her husband had shewed himselfe in her behalfe, a man of al of her most cruell end disloyall. Wherefore turning her selfe toward the Scholler, she said vnto him.

Alonso, I cannot deny, but that my husband hath béene to mée, not onely vnkinde but cruell also: nor I can not but confesse, that you haue declared your selfe to be most loving and affectionated toward me: And of force I must acknowledge my selfe beholding vnto you, of no lesse then of my life, since (alas) I sée my selfe here a-

mong

mong dead bodies buried aliue. But for almuch, as though my husband haue broken his vowe to me, I haue not yet at any time failed my faith to him, I do require you, that if you desire that I should esteeme this kind and louing office of yours, as it deserueth to be esteemed, or make accompt of this life, which you haue giuen me, you will haue due regard and consideration of mine honesty, and that you will not by offring me any villanie (which nevertheless I can not any way misdoubt, where I haue alwaies found so much and so great courtesie) make this your courteous and pitifull acte to be lesse commendable, and praise worthy then it is. Which if you do bridle your vnlawfull and sensuall appetite and desire, will remaine the most vertuous and worthy of honour and fame, that euer courteous Gentleman hath done for a miserable woman, since the world began.

Alonso failed not with effectuall and manifest arguments to perswade her, that her husband had now no more right or title to her at al, and that although he had, yet if she were wise, she should not cõmit her selfe vnto his courtesie againe, since by this mortall token, he had giuen her a sufficient testimony of his rancker, and euil will towards her, whereby she might well enough bee assured not to escape, whensoeuer she should resolue, to putte herselfe againe into his handes: And that therefore she was not to make any accompt of him, but to shew her selfe thankfull, for so great a benefit as shee had receiued, and to requite him so with her fauour and courtesie, as he might now in the ende, attaine to gather the fruit of his long and constant good will, and of his trauell sustained for the safegard of her life. And with those words bending himselfe toward her, he would haue taken a kisse of her lippes. But Agatha thrusting him backe, said to him againe. If my husband (Alonso) haue broken those bands wherewith I was knit vnto him by Patrimony, though his wicked and lewd demeanour, yet haue not I for my part dissolued them neither will I at any time so long as I shall liue.

As for committing my selfe vnto his courtesie, or going any more into his handes, therein I thinke it good to follow your aduise: not that I wold be vnwilling to liue and dwell with him, if I might hope to finde him better disposed: but because I would be loath to fall eftsones into the like daunger and grieuous perill. And as for requiting you, for this your cõmendable trauaile in my behalfe, I know not what better recompence I am able to giue you, then to reb

be and bind you for euer, and to acknowledge my selfe beholding bin to your courtesie for my life: Which Obligation if it may satisfie you, I will be as glad and as content, as I may bée in this miserable state wherein I am. But if your meaning perchance bée, that the losse of mine honesty should be the reward and hire for your paines, I do beseech you to depart hence out of this Toumbe, and to leaue me héere enclosed, for I had rather die here thus buried quick through the cruelty of my husband, then through any such compassion or pitty to saue my life, with the losse of mine honour and good name.

The Scholler by these words, perceiuing well enough the honest disposition of Agatha, which he wondered at, considering that the terrour of death it selfe was not able once to moue her from her faithfulnesse and constancy of minde. And though it were grieuous vnto him to find her so stedfast, yet hoping that by time in the ende he might ouercome her chast and honest purpose, answered: that he could not but commend her for her disposition, though he deserued a kinder recompence of his long and feruent loue, and she a more louing and faithfull husband. But since she was so resolued, he would frame himselfe to be content with what she would, and not craue of her any thing that she would not willingly graunt him to haue. And therewith helping her out of the Sepulcher, hée led her home vnto his house, and left her there with an old woman that kept his house, to whom he recommended her, and whose helpe he was assured of, to dispose the good will of Agatha towards him, and the next morning returned into the Citty.

Gonsales after a fewe daies, séeming not to be able to liue without a wife to take care of his familie, wedded that honest Dame Aselgia, and made her mistres of himselfe and all that he had. This his new marriage so soone contrived, caused the friendes of Agatha to marualle not a little, and to misdoubt that the sodaine death of their kinswoman, had not happened without some misery. Nevertheless, hauing no token nor euidence or proofe, they held their peace. But Gonsales hauing his desired purpose and liuing with his new wife, it befell vnto him (through Gods iust iudgement with this his holy Dame) as it chaunced to Agatha with him before. For Aselgia that was neuer wont to feade with so spare a diet, as shee that had neuer béene contented before without great change, nor had not bin vsed to that kind of straightnes (which Gonsales growing iealous

of

of her, began to keepe her in) but had alwaies lined at libertie, and with such licentiousnesse, as women of her profession are wont to doe, became in shorte space to shewe her selfe so precise vnto him, and to hate and abhorre him in such extreame sorte, that she could not abide to see, or heare him spoken of. By occasion of which her demeanour towardes him: Gonsales to his griefe began at last, to knowe and to discerne what difference there is betweene the honest & carefull loue of an honest wife, and the dissembling of an arrant Strumpet. Wherefore one daie among the rest, complaining of the little loue which he perceiued she bare him, and she aunswering him thwartly. Gonsales falling into heate of Choler, said angerly vnto her: haue I thou naughty packe poysoned Agatha for thy sake, that was the kindest and the louingest wife that euer man had, and is this the rewarde I haue and the requitall thou yeldest me, to shewe thy selfe euery daie more despightfull and crabbed then other? Aselgia hauing heard him and noted well his wordes, tooke holde of them, and straight way thought that she had founde the waie to rid her selfe of Gonsales: wherefore she reuealed his speeches vnto a Ribalde of hers, such a one as supplied her want of that which Gonsales alone nor ten such as he were able to satisfie her withall, and induced him to appeach him for that facte, assuring her selfe that the Lawe would punishe him with no lesse then death, and thereby she to remaine at libertie to doe what she list againe as she had done before. This companion accused Gonsales vpon his owne wordes vnto the friendes of Agatha, who hauing had halfe a suspition thereof before, went and accused him likewise before the Iudge, or head Magistrate of the Citie. Whereupon Gonsales and his woman were both apprehended and put to their examinations, to search out the truth: which Gonsales, being halfe conuicted by the confession of the gentle peate his new wife, but chiefly grieued with the worme of his owne conscience, and to auoide the torment of those terrors which he knewe were prepared for him, confessed flatly, affirming that he had poysoned her with a poyson which he had kept of long time before in his house, perfourming yet therein the promise which he had made vnto the Scholer. And vpon his owne confession, sentence was giuen against him that he should lose his head.

Alonso when hee vnderstood that Gonsales was condemned to die, was very glad thereof, supposing that he being once dead, Agatha (who al this while for any thing that the old woman could

saie

say or alledge vnto her in the behalfe of Alonso, would neuer yéld or consent to any one point wherein her honour might haue béene touched or spotted) should remaine at his discretion, and that she would no longer refuse to grant him her good will when she should sée her selfe deliuered of Gonsales. But the day being come wherein he was to be put to execution, she hauing had intelligence of all that had passed, and knowing that he was appointed to die that day, determined with her selfe that she would in that extremitie deliuer her disloyall husband, and giue him to vnderstand how little she had deserued to be so entreated by him as she had béene. Wherefore hauing gotten out of Alonso his house, she hyed her vnto the Citie as fast as she could, and being before the Iustice or Magistrate, she said vnto him. Sir, Gonsales whom you haue condemned and commanded to be put to death this day, is wrongfully condemned: for it is not true that he hath poysoned his wife, but she is yet aliue, and I am she. Therefore I beseech you giue order that execution may be staied, since that your sentence is grounded vpon a false enformation and confession is vniust, as you may plainly discerne by me béeing here.

When the Gouernour heard Agatha speake in this sorte whom he had thought to haue béene dead and buried, he was all amazed and halfe afraide to looke vpon her, doubting that she was rather her spirit or ghost, or some other in her likenesse then a liuely woman indéed: for she was apparelled in a very plaine and black attyre, and was very wanne and pale by reason of the affliction which she had indured. First, for her owne ill fortune, and then for the misehance of her husband.

In this meane while, the Sergeants and Officers had brought Gonsales before the Iustice or Magistrate, to the end that he (according vnto the Custome of the Citie) should giue them commandement to lead him to the place of execution, and there to fulfill his sentence vpon him. But as soone as Agatha perceiued him, she ranne vnto him, and taking him about the neck and kissing him, she said. Alas my deare husband, whereunto doe I sée you brought through your owne folly and disordinate appetite which blinded your iudgement. Beholde here your Agatha aliue and not dead, who euen in this extremitie is come to shew her selfe, that louing and faithfull wife vnto you, that she was euer.

The Iustice or Gouernour séeing this strange accident, caused

execution to be staide, and signified the whole case vnto the Lord of the Countrey, who at that time chaunced to bee at Sciuille: who wondering no lesse then the other at the matter, caused both Gonsales and his wife to be brought before him, and demaunded of them how it had chaunced that she hauing bin buried for dead was now found aliue. Gonsales, could say nothing but that for the loue hée bare vnto Aselgia he had poysoned his wife, and that he knewe not how she was reuiued againe. But Agatha, declared how the Scholler with his skill had deliuered her from death, and restored her life vnto her, but how or by what meanes she could not tell.

The Lord hauing sent for Alonso, and demaunded of him the truth, was certified by him, how that in stéd of poyson he had giuen to Gonsales a pouder to make her sleape: Affirming likewise that notwithstanding the long and earnest pursuite, which he had made to obtaine her loue, and the cruelties, and iniuries which she sawe her husband had vsed toward her, to put her in that daunger and perill of her life, out of which he had deliuered her, yet could he neuer by any perswasion or entreatie win her to fulfill his desire, or bring her to make breach of her faith and honestie. By which report the Lord knew verie well, that in an honest woman the regard and respect of her honour and chastitie, doeth farre exceed any other passion, for any miseries be it neuer so great. And commending highly the loue, and constancie of the woman toward her husband, and praising the policie of Alonso, he tourned himselfe vnto Gonsales, and saied vnto him. Full euill hast thou deserued to haue so good, and so vertuous a Gentlewoman to thy wife, and in reason she ought now rather to be Alonso his wife then thine: Neither wert thou worthie of lesse then that punishment, which the Law hath condemned thée vnto, though she be yet aliue, since thou, asmuch as in thée lay, hast done, to bereaue her of her life. But I am content that her vertue and goodnesse, shall so much be auaileable vnto thée, that thou shalt haue thy life spared vnto thée for this time: Not for thy owne sake, because thou deseruest it not, but for hers, and not to giue her that sorrowe and greefe, which I knowe she would feele, if thou shouldest die in that sorte. But I sweare vnto thée, that if euer I maie vnderstand that thou doe vse her henceforth, otherwise then louingly and kindly, I will make thée to thy greeuous paine proue how seuerely I can punish such beastly and heinous factes, to the example of all others.

Gonsales

Gonsales imputing his former offence, to want of wittie iudgement, made promise vnto the Lord, that he would alwayes doe as he had commanded him. And accordingly hauing forsaken cleane that baggage strumpet, that he had wedded: he liued all the rest of his dayes in god loue and peace with Agatha his wife, whose chaste and constant minde, caused Alonso where before he loued her for her exterior beautie, euer after to reuerence her, and in manner to worship her as a diuine creature, for the excellencie of her vertue. Resoluing with himselfe that a more constant faith and honest disposition could not be found in any mortall woman.

FINIS.

Of Aramanthus borne a Leper.

The argument of the vii. Historie.

¶Aramanthus *sonne to* Rodericke *King of* Tolosia, *being borne a Leper, was sent by his father to the Ile of* Candy *for remedie, and by a tempest at the Sea, the ship was driuen into Turkie, where she was cast away, and no man saued but the childe, which was taken vp by a poore Fisherman, and fostered as his owne sonne, and afterwards serving the Turke in his warres, shewed himselfe so politique, that the Turke by his onely aduise, incroched much vpon the Christians, and in fine by his meanes the Citie of* Tolosia *was taken, his father put in prison, and how in the end he was knowne to be the sonne of* Roderick.

I Shall not néede by any long circumstance to discribe, how many troubles, tumults, broyles, Brabbles, Murthers, Treasons, how kingdomes haue béene disturbed, how many Countries layd waste: How many Cities haue béen sacked, how many Townes haue béene raised, and how many mischiefes haue euer happened, sithence the first creation of the world, vntill

vntill this preſent day, by that monſterous vice Ambition. Conſidering that euery Hiſtorie maketh mention, euery Chronicle beareth recorde, and euery age, time, and ſeaſon, haue ſéene with their eyes, and this our tale that followeth ſhall ſome thing make more euident.

There was ſometime remaining in the famous Citie of Toloſia a worthy King, whoſe name was Roderick: who was likewiſe eſpouſed to a moſt vertuous Quéene called Iſabell, and truely a happy Court it might be called, which they held, aſwell for the loue that was betwéene the King and Quéene: As for the vertus and clemencis, wherewith both the one and the other were accompanied.

There was remaining in the Court, the Duke of Caria, who was the onely brother of Rodericke King of Toloſia, this Duke being a great deale more vicious then his brother was vertuous, practiſed no other thing, but how he might come by the kingdome of Toloſia: knowing that there were no more betwéene him and it but the King, who loued him more dearely by a great deale then he deſerued. But it fell out the Quéene Iſabell was knowne to be with childe, the Duke very lothe that any other heires ſhould ſtep in betwéene him and home, deuiſed to poyſon the Quéene, and ſo had thought to haue done, by as many as the King ſhould haue taken to wife (if at any time they proued to be with Childe) but by the prouidence of God, this poyſon tooke no great effect in the Quéene, ſauing that when ſhe was deliuered of a Sonne, the childe was found to be in a notable Leproſie, and the King hauing intelligence of an excellent Phiſition, (but eſpecially for the curing of that diſeaſe) was remaining in the Ile of Candy, prepared a Ship preſently to ſend the child, which by the extremitie of a contrarie winde, was driuen into Turkie, and the Ship caſt away vpon the maine, and all the men drowned excepting the childe, which being in a Cradle was carryed to the ſhore as it laye. Where a Fiſherman found it, with ſuch ſumptuous furnitures about it, with a very riche Iewell hanging about the necke. He tooke it vp in his armes, and carrying it home, with Bathes and homely Oyntmentes of his owne deuiſing, within a very little ſpace, the childe was reſtored to perfect health, whom hee called Aramanthus, and brought him vp as his owne Sonne, the childe knowing no other indeed, but that the Fiſherman

had bin his father, and as Aramanthus grew in yeares, so he proued of a very comely personage, but of a most excellent and perfect witte, although he had no other training vp, but vsed to goe to the Sea with his father a fishing.

Now it fell out that the Turke was leuying a mightie Armie, to set vpon the Christians, the cause was this, he had two children, a sonne and a daughter, the daughter her name was Florella, whose beautie was very excellent, and minding to match his daughter with some noble Prince, he pretended that such Countries, Cities, Townes, Castels, Forts, or what so euer he could by conquest get from the Christians, to giue them all for his daughters dowrie.

Aramanthus hearing of this preparation to the warres, would néeds become a Souldier, whereat his father the Fisherman was greatly displeased, and began to preach vnto his sonne of the incommodities of warre, and with how many miseries Souldiers are besieged, Aramanthus whose balenesse of his bringing vp, could not conceale the nobilitie of his birth, would in no wise be perswaded but goe he would, and being prested for an ordinarie Souldier, when he came to the place of seruice shewed himselfe so valiant, and in verie short space became to bee so expert, that, that Captaine vnder whose Enseigne he serued, bare away the credit from all the reste: and in the ende was himselfe preferred to charge, which he gouerned with so great discretion, and still conduced with such celeritie and sleight, that who but Aramanthus and his companie had the onely name throughout the Turkes campe, and where there was any attempt to be giuen, where valiancie should be showne, Aramanthus he must giue the charge, and where any policie must bée put in practise, Aramanthus hée must laye the platte: that to bée short, he grewe into such credite with the great Turke himselfe, that Aramanthus onely gaue him counsaill in all his affaires, and therewith all had so good successe, that his practises still preuailed, and came to happie ende, that the Turke by his aduise, had done wonderfull spoiles vpon the Christians, and had taken from them many Cities, Townes, and Prouinces.

And thus leauing them in the warres for a season, I will conuaye my tale againe to Isabell Quéene and wife to Rodericke, who was now the second time knowne to be with child, wherat the Duke of Caria being wonderfully wroth, pretending to finde a quick dispatch for all together, he secretly accused the Quéene of Adulterie to

the

the King his brother, and with such allegations and false witnesses as he had prouided, so enformed the King that his tale was credited: and the rather for that the King knowing his Quéene to bée with child, did thinke himselfe too far spent in yéeres to doo such a déede. And yet the King was replenished with so great pittie, that hée could not endure to heare of her death: he therefore by a messenger commaunded her presently to depart the Court: and in paine of her life, neuer after come in his presence. These newes did wonderfully amaze the Quéene, who with many pitteous intercessions desired to knowe her accusers, and that shée might but speake for her selfe before his Maiestie, and then as he should finde her, to vse her according to her deserts. But all in vaine, for the Duke had so throughly incensed the King, that he would neuer abide to see, nor heare her. The Duke vnderstanding how matters had passed, came to the Quéene, and seemed much to lament her case, perswading her to hold her selfe contented for a little season, not doubting but in time that he himselfe would so perswade with his brother, that she should be heard to speake in her owne defence, in the meane season, if it pleased her to vse his house in the countrie, he would prouide for her all manner of necessaries, whatsoeuer she should want, and for her better comfort, if she had any assured friend, whose company she desired, that she might secretly send for them to hold her fellowshippe, and to passe the time, and that he himselfe would many times visite her, and daily enforme her how matters did passe in her behalfe, with the King his brother.

The poore Quéene, thinking all had proceeded of good will, which this Traitor had proffered, gaue him more then a thousand thanks, repossing her selfe and the innocencie of her cause, onely in this Iudas who practised nothing els but her death, and the death of that she went withall.

The next day he prouided a couple of Ruffians, such as he knew were for his purpose, which should haue secretly conueyed her to the Dukes house (as she had thought) but as the Duke had willed them, as they rode ouer a Forrest when they came to the side of a woode, they toke her from her horse: spoiled her of such things as were about her, and minded to haue killed her, and throwne her in some Bushe: but it fell out that there were certaine banished men in the Woode, which liued in that desart in manner of Outlawes and hearing the pitteous complaint of the Quéene, they came to her

reseue, but the villaines that would haue slain her, perceiuing them fledde and left the Quéene, where these Outlawes came vnto her, vnto whom from poynt to poynt she declared euery thing, howe it happened vnto her, the Outlawes hauing great compassion, when they knew her to be the Quéene, for that they had euer heard her to be noble reported on, brought her with them to their Caue, where they ministered such releefe to her distresse, as men might doe that were in their estates. The Quéene thinking that GOD had preserued her life to some better purpose, contented her selfe for a season to remaine amongest them: Where she learned to plaie the Cooke and to dresse their meate, such as they brought in, or could prouide for in the Forest. And thus leauing the Quéene with these Outlawes, I will retourne againe to speake of Aramanthus, who was now deuising to frame a plotte, how he might betray ỳ Citie of Tolosia, whereof his father was king, as you haue heard.

For the Turke hauing intelligence of the pleasauntnesse of this Citie, and of the wonderfull wealth and riches wherewith it did abounde, and therewithall had learned that it was of such force and inuincible strength, that there was no maner of hope how it might be subdued, whereat the Turke was verie sorowfull and sadde.

But my pore Fisherman Aramanthus, whose cunning neuer failed, where courage could not helpe, caused the Turke with his whole armie by Sea, to come before this Citty, which is situate faste vpon the sea side, and there to come to an anker, where Aramanthus himselfe, as a messenger appointed from the Turke, came to ỳ king of Tolosia, to whom he told this tale. That the Turke his maister hauing bin in diuers parts of Christendom, where he had made warres a long space, vpon diuers considerations, minding to depart with his Armie into his owne Country for a season, and being vpon the Seas, one night as he was lying vpon his bedde, beholde, a vision appeared vnto him in a dreame, which shewed him how grieuously he had offended the God of the Christians in the persecuting, spoyling, and the murthering of them, as he had done in this iourney, and for that he should know, that the Christian God was the most high and almighty God indéed, whom with his tyranny he had so displeased, he should be crepled of all his limmes from that time forth, till his dying day, which should very shortly follow, with this he awaked, and giuing a piteous grone such as was about him comming vnto him, found him in a wonderfull maze, and

so

so benummed in al his parts that he was not able to stirre hand nor foote: The next day calling his Counsaillers & Captains about him, not able of himselfe to come forth amongst them, but as he was brought out of his Cabine on mens backes, he declared vnto them the whole circumstance of the premisses, and beyng stricken with a wonderfull remorse in conscience, he determined to saile backe againe, not minding to depart from out those parts of Christendome, till he had made satisfaction of all such spoiles and outrages, as hee had committed against the Christians and himselfe with his whole armie to become Christened, and there to bee instructed in the true and perfect faith, and as he continued this determination, behold, a contrary wind hath driuen vs on these parts, where hearyng of the fame of this noble Citty of Tolosia, he hath sent me vnto your grace, desiring nothing but your safe conduct for himselfe, and certaine of his chiefe Lords and Counsaillers that bee about him, that in this noble Citty they might be Baptized, and receiue the Christian faith, promising hereafter, not onely to ioyne in league, and perfect amitie with the Christians, but also to lincke with them in Religion, himselfe, his Countries, Kingdomes, and Prouinces.

This tale was not so smoothly told, but there was great doubt and suspicion had in the matter, in the end thinking they could receiue no preiudice, by receiuing of so small a number, gaue safe conduct for the Turke himselfe, and for fiue hundred of his companie, such as it pleased himselfe to appoint.

The next day, the Turke was brought into the Citie on mens shoulders, with his appointed company, where he was worthely receiued by the King himselfe, with the rest of his Lordes, and brought into a Pallace of purpose, very richly furnished, where beeing laid softly vpon a bed, as though he had beene able neither to stand nor sit, and giuing the King with the rest of his companie, great thanks for his intertainement, he desired him with the Duke his brother (according to the custome) to be his Godfathers when he should be Christened, to which request they both willingly agreed: the next daie the Turke himselfe was the first that receiued Christendome, and then all the rest of his noble men that were with him, the which being finished with many godly exhortations were preached vnto them by learned men. The Turke seemed in very gratefull manner to take this courtesie, wherewith the king had vsed him: & thus taking his leaue himself withal his company, departed again aboard his Shippes

shippes, the Turke himselfe being carried vpon mens backes, making show as though he had beene so feeble and weake, that he had not bin able to haue moued, or stirred any one ioynt without helpe, saying that hee would haue departed with his companie into Turkey.

The king of Tolosia, withall his people and Citizens, seing with what deuotion the Turke with the rest of his companie had receiued Christendome, beganne to thinke assuredly, that onely by the Diuine prouidence of God, the Turke was so conuerted, and doubted nothing of the tale, which Aramanthus before had tolde them, which tourned in the ende to their vtter subuersion. For the next day Aramanthus comming againe to the king, brought worde of the death of the Turke, and with a pitious discourse vttered, with a number of fained sighes, said: that about twelue a cloche of the night past, the Turke deceased, and desired at the houre of his death that as in this worthy Citty, he had receiued the true & Catholike faith, so likewise that he might be entombed, and receiue Christian burial in the Cathedrall Church, to the which hee had giuen by his Will fourtie thousand Frankes, more to the common Treasure of the Citty a hundred thousand Frankes, to the king himselfe as a presentment of his good will, a rich Jewell, which himselfe did weare of great estimation, to the Duke his brother, his owne Armour and furniture. Item, to the reliefe of the poore within the Citty ten thousand Frankes, many other things (quoth Aramanthus) he hath bequeathed that I haue not spoken of, the which God willing shall be performed to the vttermost.

The king seemed greatly to lament the death of the Turke, and began to coniecture assuredly, that it was the will of God but to preserue his life till he had receiued christendome, but the time of his burial was deferred for certaine daies, till things might be prouided and more ready for the pompe and solempnising of his Funerall, & wonderfull cost was bestowed by Aramanthus, who had the onely ordering of the matter, hoping in the ende to receiue the whole commodity: and also to be rewarded with a large and bountifull intreat, the day of burial being at hand, Aramanthus desired the king, that for so much as the Turke had finished his daies in the middest of his army amongst his souldiours, that he might likewise be buried like a noble captaine, and according to the manner of the field, he might be brought to his graue with certaine bandes, trailing their weapons,

as the custome of souldiers is to burie their dead. This request seemed to be verie conuenient, and therfore was the readilier graunted: but what should I stand with long circumstaunce to discipher all the Ceremonies that were vsed in this treason. The day was come that this practise must bee put in vre, and an emptie coffin solempnly brought to the Cittie, vnder shewe of great sorrow, when they were all filled with great ioy and gladnesse, to see what happie successe was like to followe, of that they had premeditated, and according as Aramanthus had giuen order, fiue thousand of their choise men were appointed to march, the one halfe before, and the other halfe after the Coffin, trailing their Ensignes and weapons, and in this manner they entered the Cittie, where the king with his nobles and principalles of the Cittie, were readie in mourning weedes to accompanie the Corse. When Aramanthus sawe his time, the Alarum was giuen, and he himselfe was the first that laied handes of the king his Father, the rest of his nobles were so enclosed, that there could not one of them escape: defence there was none to be made, for the one side were in armes, killing and murthering of as many as they could see stirring in the streates: the other side vnprouided glad to hide themselues, for the sauegard of their liues, the resse of the fleete were likewise in a readinesse, & running a lande entered the Cittie, where there was no man to repulse them. And thus the famous Cittie, of Tolosa was taken by the Turkes, euen in a moment, without any manner of resistaunce: the Churches and prisons were filled ful of Christians, where they were whipped, racked, & tormented to the death, vnlesse they would forsake their faith, the king himselfe with his brother and all the lords, were committed to prison, there to be fed with bread and water (and yet to be scanted with such short allowance, as it was not able to suffice nature) and so to be dieted, vnlesse they would forsake their faith.

Now the Turke, who onely by the meanes of Aramanthus, had conquered from the Christians so many Cities and Townes, for the loue he bare vnto him, and in respect of his seruice, determined to make Aramanthus his sonne in lawe, and to giue him his daughter Florella for his wife, and for her dowrie, all such partes as hee had taken from the Christians by conquest: and vnderstanding that the father of Aramanthus was but a poore Fisherman, he pretended likewise to make him a Duke, and to giue him liuing to maintain his estate. The Turke therfore withal possible speed, dailed

messengers with shipping, to bring his daughter, with the olde Fisher man the supposed Father of Aramanthus, to this Citie of Tolosia, where he minded to performe that he had determined.

Now it fell out that the miserable Quéene Isabell (whome you haue heard was left with child, remaining with certaine Outlawes) was deliuered of a daughter, which she her selfe nursed in the Caue, where she had remained, and hearing that the Turke had taken the Citie of Tolosia, would néedes goe sée what was become of the king her husbande: Her daughter which was not yet fully a yeare olde, she committed to the Outlawes, to bée fostered with such homely Junkettes, as they could prouide, who seeing her determination, promised to doe Nurse the child so wel as they could, till she should make retourne. Thus preparing her selfe in a verie simple attire, with a bondel of Brownes on her head, she came to the Citie, of Tolosia, where roaming vp and downe the streates to sell her Brownes, she learned all that had happened to the King, and how he was readie to perish, for want of foode & sustenance, wherfore, minding to giue such succours as her habilitie would serue: She deuised in the manner of a poore seruant, to getts into the seruice of the Turke, who was the Jailer, and had the custodie of the King, where euery night, as opportunitie would serue, she conueighed to him through a grate, such fragmentes as she spared out of her owne beallie, which were verie short, and there withal much more homely, but some thing the better to amende his cheare. She would leane her selfe cloase to the grate, and thrusting in her Teate betweene the Irons, the King learned againe to sucke, and thus she dieted him a long season. Neither wist the king what she was, that bestowed on him so great grace and goodnesse: yet he blessed her more then a thousand times a daie. And although there were many of his companie, that died for want of sustenaunce, yet hee againe with these banquetes, recouered himselfe, and began to wax strong. Where at the Turke beganne to suspecte some partialitie in the Jailer, and caused a priuie watche to bée kept: But Isabel suspecting nothing, according to her accustomed manner, at Night when it was darke came to her Nurserie, where her order that she so long vsed, was espied, and being apprehended by the watch, the next daie she was presented to the Turke, and in what maner they had found her, whereat the Turke wonderfully agréued: Sware by Mahound himselfe, that shée should presently be tortured with the greatest

tormentes

toments that might be deuised. And in the middest of his furie, word was brought him that his daughter Florella, with the Fisherman that was Father to Aramanthus were arriued, and readie to present themselues before him, whereat the Turke wonderfully reioyced and calling Aramanthus, caused them to be brought in, Florella gaue that reuerence to the Turke, which both appertained to the dutie of a Childe, and also as belonged to his estate. Aramanthus likewise, although he were the greatest Counsailour, appertinent to the Turke, yet vsed that dutifull reuerence to the Fisherman his Father, as is to be required in a Childe. The Turke imbracing his daughter Florella, tolde her the cause that he had sent for her, was to espouse her to Aramanthus, who although the Destinies had denyed to make Noble by place of birthe, yet through his vertues, valiance, and worthy exploites, he had gained the title of true Nobilitie, in despighte of Fortunes teeth. Florella hauing heard of the fame and worthinesse of Aramanthus, was the best pleased woman in the world.

And the Turke turning him towards the Fisherman, said, and a thousand times happie art thou old Father, that hast liued to see thy selfe so highly exalted in thy offspring: The poore Fisherman kneeling downe, said: Most mightie, and magnificent Prince, not minding longer to conceale the thing which might redound so greatly to the contentation of such worthy personages, seeing then that Aramanthus, who onely through his owne valiancie, hath aspired to so great dignitie and honour. How greatly were I then to be blamed, and how worthily might I be condemned? If I should take vpon me to be the sire of him, who by all likelihood, is descended of Royall and Princely race, for better testimonie, behold this riche Mantle, and these other costly furnitures, wherein I found Aramanthus wrapped, and by seeming saued by his Cradell, which brought him a shore, from some Ship that was wracked, where I found him by the Sea side (as I say) wrapped in these sumptuous furnitures, with this riche and precious Iewell about his necke, being but an Infant, by coniecture not aboue the age of a quarter of a yeare, where taking him vp in my armes, I brought him home to my house, called him by the name of Aramanthus, and thus fostered him vp as my owne child, vntill the day that he came to serue your Maiestie in the warres.

The Queene Isabell which stood by, and heard this discourse,

and ſeeing the furnitures and the Jewelles, wherewith ſhe had decked her childe, aſſuring her ſelfe that Aramanthus was her ſonne, could no longer ſtay her ſpeech, but ſaid: And doe I then behold my ſonne with my vnhappy eyes, is he liuing here in preſence, whom I deemed to be dead? Oh moſt gratious Gods I yelde you humble thanks, and would to God my ſonne thy comming had bin but halfe ſo happy, as thy preſence is ioyfull to me thy wretched Mother. What newes bee theſe (quoth the Turke) which I heard, I thinke the Woman bee out of her wittes: but what art thou that woulddeſt challenge Aramanthus for thy ſonne, whoſe parentes nowe I well perceiue, are no beggers like thy ſelfe. Yes ſurely (quoth the Queene) and much more miſerable, then thoſe that goe from doore to doore, and although his father ſomtime ſwaied the ſworde of gouernment and ſat in place and ſeate of princely Throne. Diſpatch then at once (quoth the Turke) and tell me who is his father, and what is the miſery wherewith he is perplexed: wherin if thou canſt perſwade me with a truth: aſſure thee that only for Aramanthus ſake, I am the man that will miniſter releaſe.

Behold then (quoth the Queene) King Rodericke is his father, whom thy ſelfe keepeſt here in pryſon, in this miſerable manner, and I whom thou ſeeſt here am his mother, the wife of the King, and ſometime the Queene of this wretched Citty of Toloſia, who being deliuered of a ſonne, which by the pleaſure of God was diſtilled in my wombe, and borne in an extreame Leprooſie: for helpe whereof hee was ſent by his Father by Shipping to the Ile of Candy, and till this preſent day there was never tidings heard either of the Ship, or any other man that was in her. And nowe beholde I ſee with mine eies the furnitures wherein I wrapped my child, and the Jewell which I put about his neck with mine owne handes at his departure: the Fiſherman verifying this tale to be true, ſayd indeede that he found him in an extreame maladie, which hee cured himſelfe with medicines of his owne prouiding.

Aramanthus hauing heard how matters were ſorted out, began to teare himſelfe, ſaying: Ah moſt wicked and vnnaturall wretch, what furies haue ſaued thee, that thou wert not drowned with the reſt, but that thou muſt be preſerued as an inſtrument to worke thy parents wracke: Come come you Helliſh Hagges, and ſhewe your force on him that hath worthily deſerued it. But what hath Tantalus offended, that hee ſhould continually bee ſterued:

Or how hath Sisiphus that rowles the restlesse stone? Or what trespasse hath bin committed by Prometheus, Ixyon, Tityus, or Danaus fifty daughthers, drawing water at the well? That may bee compared to that which I haue done, is it possible then that I should escape vnpunished? Or that the sacred Gods will be vnreuenged of my fact, no no, I haue deserued to be plagued, and haue merited more worthely to be tormented then any of these afore rehearsed. Florella ouer hearing these desperate speeches, fell downe in a sownd for grieke to see her Aramanthus so disquieted. The Turke after his daughter was come againe to her selfe, sorrowed to see the beauinesse of Aramanthus, caused the King his Father with the Duke of Caria presently to bee sent for out of prison: And taking Isabell on the one of his handes, and Aramanthus on the other, he said to the King, receiue here noble Prince, a most louing and faithfull Wife, and a most valiaunt and worthy Sonne: And my selfe from an enimy, for euer after this, to become thy most assured and trusty friend.

The King was wonderfully amazed to heare these speeches, did thinke himselfe to be in some dreame: till in the end he heard the whole discourse how euery thing had happened, and being rauished with gladnesse, he said.

O happy euill, which bringeth in the ende so great a good, and welcome bee that sorrowe, whereby is sprong a ioy, much more surmounting, then euer was any heauinesse: and with many like speeches, he still embraced his sonne Aramanthus in his armes, and although he vnderstood that it was the Queene his wife, which so louingly had succoured him, when he was ready to haue famished in the prison, for want of meate: yet he could not finde in his heart to beare her any countenance, considering what hee had conceiued against her, by information of his brother (as before you haue heard) which being perceiued by the Duke, most humbly desiring forgiuenesse: he confessed to the King all his mischiefe: from the beginning to the ending, whereof the King was both sorrie and glad: Sorie, for that he had so vnnaturally dealt with so vertuous and courteous a wife: And glad for that he was so resolued and confirmed in her chastity, which before he had in suspense.

And now the Turke, for the loue he bare to Aramanthus, and for the liking that he saw to bee in his Daughter towardes him, whom he himselfe had appointed to be her spouse, became indeede

to be Christened, with all his retinue that was about him, and then restoring Rodericke againe to the kingdome of Tolosia. By all consents the marriage betwéene Aramanthus and Florella, was concluded with great pompe and magnificence: & thus the Turke leauing this new married couple in the city of Tolosia, departed with his armie into Turkye.

The Quéene Isabell, not forgetting the great goodnesse she had receiued by these Outlawes, which before had saued her life, and with whom her daughter yet remained, so dealt with the King her husband, that they were altogether sent for, and very ioyfully receiuing his daughter: restored the Outlawes againe to their liberty: bestowing of them for recompence, roomes, and offices of credit and estimation. Thus to conclude, euery one beeing well contented, they liued together in quietnesse, with many long and happie dates.

FINIS.

Of Phylotus and Emelia.

The argument of the viij. Historie.

¶ Philotus *an old and auncient Citizen of* Rome, *falleth in loue with* Emelia, *a yong and beautifull virgin the Daughter of* Alberto, *who knowing the wonderfull wealth of* Phylotus, *would haue forced his daughter to haue married him: but in the ende was pretilie deceiued by* Phylerno, *the brother of* Emelia, *who married with* Phylotus *in his sisters stead, and other prety actions that fell out by the waye.*

IT hath many times bin had in question, and yet could neuer be decided from whence this passion of extreame loue doth proceed, whose furie is such where it once taketh possession, that (as they say) loue is without lawe, so it maketh the Pacientes to be as vtterly void of reason, but in my opinion the selfe same thing, which is many times shadowed vnder the title of loue, may more properly be termed, & called by

by the name of lust, but be it loue, or be it lust, the difference is nothing so much as the humour that feedes it, is wonderfull strange, & hath no maner of certainty in it, excepting this, it is without partiality, for commonly when it driueth vs to effect, it is done without any maner of respect, for some time it maketh vs to linger after our friends, sometime to languish after our foes, yea: betweene whom there hath bin had mortall hostility: the sonne hath bin seene to fall in loue with the wife of his father, the father againe in like manner with the wife of his sonne, the king hath bin attached with the poore & needie begger, the poore againe in lyking with those of high degree, yea and though there haue bin many which haue seene their owne errour, and therewith all haue confessed their abuse, yet they haue not bin able to refraine themselues, from prosecuting their folly to the end, and albeit, reason proffereth vs sondry sufficient causes, why we ought to refraine the appetite of our own desires, yet fancie then is he that striketh such a stroke, that reasons rules can naught at all preuaile. & like as those whō loue hath once intangled, the more they striue the farther they be tied, so it is impossible that loue shold be cōstrained, where affection driues not lyking, nor fancie is not fed, but where these two hath once ioyned in election, all other affects be so dimme & blinded, that euery vice seemeth to vs a vertue, wherof springeth this Prouerbe. In loue there is no lacke, so that indeed to say the truth, if there be any piety to be imputed to this raging loue, it is in that it is not partiall, nor hath it any respect of persons, but be they friends, be they foes, be they rich, be they poore, be they young, be they old, be they wise, be they foolish, loue is still indifferent, & respecteth all alike, but if any man will thinke that in respect of beauty, we esteeme not all the rest: I am able to say it is not true, considering how many haue forsaken the better lyking, & haue chosen the worse, so that for my part the more I consider of it, the more I am amazed, & therefore will beat my braines no more about it, but leaue it to the credit of such as haue bin louers themselues, whose skil in the matter I preferre before mine owne, and will come to my Historie of Phylotus, who being an aged man, fell in loue with a young maiden, farre vnfitting to his yeares, and followeth in this sort.

In the gallant citty of Naples, there was remaining a yong man, called by the name of Alberto. This Alberto being married not fully out a yeere, his wife was deliuered of a Sonne whom he named Phylerno, and vpon diuers considerations, minding to chaunge his habi-

habitation, he prepared himselfe to goe dwell at Rome, and first taking order for his sonne Phylerno, who for the tenderneſſe of his age he left ſtill in Naples at nurſe, himſelfe, his wife, with all the reſte of his houſehold came to Rome, where he had not long remained, but his wife was likewiſe delivered of a daughter, whom he called by the name Emelia, who as ſhee grewe in yeares, ſhee likewiſe prooued to bee very beautifull and faire, and amongſt a great nomber of others, there was dwelling in Rome an auncient Citizen, whoſe name was Phylotus, a man very orderly in yeares, and wonderfully abounding in goods, this Phylotus having many times taken the view of Emelia, beganne to growe very ſore in loue with her, or rather I may ſaie in his old yeares began to doate after this young maiden, for it can not be properly called loue in theſe olde men, whoſe dotage if it were not more then outragious, either their great diſcretion would repreſſe it, either their many yeares would mortifie it. But Phylotus in the end deſired Emelia of her father in the way of mariage, Alberto according to the cuſtome of parents, that deſires to marrie their daughters, more for goods, then for good will betweene the parties, more for lucre then for loue, more for living then for learning, more for wealth then for wit, more for honour then for honeſtie, and ſo they may haue great ſtore of money they never conſider farther of the man. Alberto in like manner knowing the wealth wherewith Phylotus was indued, who had never a childe but one onely daughter, whoſe name was Briſilla, gaue his full conſent, without any farther conſideration of the inequalitie of the yeares that was betweene Phylotus and his daughter: he never remembred what ſtrifes, what iarres, what debates, what diſcontentment, what counterfaiting, what diſſembling, what louring, what loathing, what never liking, is euer had where there is ſuch differences betweene the maried, for perfect loue can never be without equalitie, and better were a married couple to continue without living, then without loue: and what are the occaſions that make ſo many women to ſtray from their huſbands, but when they be married to ſuch as they cannot like of: but ſurely if women did throughly conſider how dangerous it is for them to deale with theſe olde youthes, I thinke they would be better adviſed in medling with them, for beſides that they be vnwildie, lothſome, (and ſir reuerence of you) very vnlouely for you to lye by, ſo they be commonly inſpired with the ſpirit of iealouſie, and then they will looke to you

ſo

so narrowly, and meto you by so closely, that you will with a thou-
sand times the Priest had beene hanged that married you, but then
to late.

But to returne to our History: Alberto respecting more the
wealth of Phylotus, then the liking of his daughter, gaue his con-
sent to take him for his sonne in lawe, and told Emelia how he had
disposed on her, Emelia seeing what an old babie her father had cho-
sen to be her husband, most humblie desired him to giue her leaue to
chose for her selfe, whereat her father being very angrie, beganne
sharpely to rate her, saying, and art thou then so much wedded to
thine owne will, that thou scornest to be directed by me thy loving
father, or thinkest thou that thy wisedome doth so far surmount my
wit, that thou canst better prouide for thy selfe then I, which so care-
fully haue hitherto brought thee vp, or doth the tender loue or
the chargeable cost which I haue bestowed on thee, deserue no
better recompence, then to despise those that I would haue thee
to like of.

Emelia falling downe of her knées before her father, said, most
deare and louing father, most humblie I beseech you, for the affecti-
on which by nature you beare me, not to thinke me so graceless a
child, that I would go about to contrary you, or stubbornely would
refuse whatsoeuer you would thinke conuenient for my behoofe, and
although you shall finde in me such duety as is méete for a Daugh-
ter, and all obedience that is fit for a child, yet sir consider the heart
which cannot be compelled, neither by feare, neither by force, nor is
not otherwise to be lured, then onely by fancies frée consent, and as
you haue bestowed on me this fraile and transitory life, so my body
shall be at your disposition, as it shall please you to appoint it, I will
conclude with this humble petition, desiring you not to bestowe mée
of any that is not agreeable to my fancie and good liking.

Well (quoth her father) then sée you frame your lyking to like
well of my liking. I haue promised you to Phylotus in marriage, &
Phylotus is he that shall be your husband, and, looke you goe not a-
bout to contende against that I haue determined, if you doe, neuer
account me for father nor friend, and thus he departed.

Emelia hearing this cruell conclusion of her father, was wonder-
fully abashed, and being by her selfe in her Chamber, shee beganne
to consider of her fathers words, and for feare to incurre any farther
displeasure, she deuised how she might frame her selfe to the lyking

of her loue, and with a yong womans minde, she first beganne to consider of his wealth, of his calling, of the reuerence wherewith he was vsed in the Citie, and that likewise in being his wife, she should also be had in estimation, and bée preferred before other women of meaner credite, and to desire superfluitie, it is commonly euery womans sickenesse, and therefore this could not choose but please her very well, then she remembred how commodious it were to marrie one so wealthie as Phylotus, whereby she should not néede to beate her braines about the practising of housewiserie, but should haue seruantes at commaundement to supply that tourne, this likewise pleased her very well, but because she would well perswade herselfe, she beganne to coniecture how shée should spend the time to her contentment, and therefore shée beganne to thinke what a pleasure it was to be well furnished with sundrie suites of apparell, that in the morning when she should rise, shée might call for what she list to put on, according as the time and the fashion did require, and her fancie serued best, for thus Phylotus was well able to kéepe his wife, and this pleased her likewise very well, and then when she were vp, shée might breake her fast with a cuppe of Malmsie, or Muscadine neere her heart. It was very good for ill ayres in a morning, and this she thought was but an easie matter, and likewise pleased her very well: when she had broken her fast, then she might stirre about the house, and looke to this, and sée to that, and where shée found any thing amisse not to touch it with her own fingers, for marring the beautie of her hande, but to call for Cicelie, Ione, or Cate, and to chide them like slutts, that they could not spie a fault but when they must be told: this likewise pleased her very well, then to haue prouided for Diner some Iunckettes, that serued best her appetite, her husband had good store of coine, and how could it bée better spent then vpon themselues, to make their fare the better, this likewise pleased her verie well, now when she had dined, then she might goe seeke out her examplers, and to peruse which worke would doe best in a ruffe, which in a Gorget, which in a Sleeue, which in a Mantle, which in a Caule, which in a Handcerchéefe, what lace would doe best to edge it, what seame, what stitch, what cutte, what garde, and to sitt her downe and take it forth by little and little: and thus with her Needle to passe the after noone, with deuising of thinges for her owne wearing, this likewise pleased her passing well, then to prouide for Supper some shift of diet, and sundrie sauces, the better to helpe

helpe the stomacke, Oranges, Leamõs, Olives, Capers, Salades of sundrie sortes, alas a crowne will goe a great way in such trifles: This likewise pleased her verie well, when shée had supped, to vse some exercise according to the season: if it were in Sommer, to goe walke with her neighbours to take the aire, or in her garden to take the verdure of sweete and pleasaunt flowers, this likewise pleased her very wel, when she was come in, and readie to goe to her Chamber, a Cuppe of cold Sacke to bedward, is verie good for digestion, & no cost to speake of, where such abounda nce dooth remaine, and this likewise pleased her verie well.

But now although shée had deuised, to passe the day time with such contentation, when she remembred at Night, she must goe to bedde to be lubber leapt: and with what cold courtesie she should be entertained by her gray headded bedfellowe, what frolen embracementes he was able to bestowe of her, al was marde, and quite dashte out of remembraunce, and all the commodities before spoken of, that she should receiue in the time of the day, would not serue to counteruaile that one incommoditie, in the season of the Night: Like as we say, one vice spilles a great number of vertues. Thus Emelia was now to séeke, and could in no wise frame her selfe to loue Philotus: But when she had flattered her selfe with a thousand delightes, that shé should receiue in the day time by his wealth, when shé remembred bedde time, she was as new to beginne as before. Wherefore she remained in great perplexitie, thinking her happe to be ouer hard, and the comfort verie bare, where the best choice had such assurance of doubtfull ende. For to marrie after her Fathers minde, she knew would breede her lothed life: and to gainsay what he had determined, would likewise lose her fathers liking, that she will not for her life whereon to resolue, and thus from day to day as she continued in this doubt. There happened to hit into her companie a young Romaine gentleman, whose name was Flauius, who sodainely fell in Loue with Emelia, and taking the time whilest his opportunitie serued: Hé lett Emelia to vnderstand, of the great Loue hé beare her. Emelia, according to the custome of women, made the matter verie cope at the first, although in her heart shé were right glad, considering her case howe it stood. Flauius was so much the more importunate vpon her, and with such nice termes as woers be accustomed; he so Courted, and followed Emelia, that she perceiuing his feruent affection, told him a verie short circumstaunce, how

her father had disposed her, to one that she could not like of, and therefore, if he would first promise to take her as his wife, and that he could finde such meanes, to conueigh her from her fathers house in secret sorte (for otherwise she was sure her Father would be a let to hinder their purpose) she was contented to hearken to his speech, and yelde to his demaund. Flanius the gladdest man in the worlde to heare these ioyfull newes, sware vnto her that all should be accomplished, and that with as much spéd as herselfe would desire.

There was no more to conclude of then, but how she might be conueighed from out her fathers house. Flanius deuised that late in an euening, or in the night time when euery one were quiet in their beds, if she could finde the meanes to get forth of doores, then he would be ready to receiue her. But that could not be, for both her Father and Mother neuer failed, to be at home in the Euenings, and at nights she was lodged in her fathers Chamber, that it was impossible for her to get forth. So that there was no remedie, but that the feate must be wrought in some after noone, when both her father and mother died to be abroad about their businesse: and then she knew not how to come forth alone, because she had not béene accustomed so to doe, and to followe a stranger, it would brede the greater suspition.

But Flanius to auoide all these surmises, deuised the next euening, to conueigh her in at some backe windowe of her fathers house a sute of mans apparell, wherein the next day in the afternoone (her father and mother being abroad) she should shift her selfe, and so come her wayes vnknowne of any to such a place: where he himselfe would be readie awaiting for her, & so conueigh her home to his owne house. This deuise Emelia liked passing well, and according as it was appointed, the next euening Flanius conueighed this sute of apparell in at the windowe, where Emelia was ready to receiue it, and laying it vp in safetie, till the next day in the afternoone, her father and her mother being both forth of doores, she quickly shifted her selfe into this mans apparell, and thus forth of doores she goes to her appointed place, where Flanius was staying, who according to promise, conueighed her home to his owne house.

This matter was not so closely handeled by Emelia, but she was espyed by one of her fathers seruants, who being on the backside through a windowe, saw her how she was stripping of her selfe, and marked how she put on the mans apparell, wherevnto the young fellow

fellowe had great marueile, and stod still beholding to se what would fall out in the end. But when he sawe her goe forth doores, he hasted after into the streate: But Emelia was so suddainly gone, that for his life he wiste not which waie to seeke after her, wherefore in a wonderfull haste, he came to his maister, whom he found in the Citie, in the companie of Philotus, saying: Oh sir, I haue very euill newes to tell you, what is the matter (quoth his Maister) is any thing amisse at home: Yea sir (quoth the seruante) your daughter Emelia is euen now departed into the City, in the habite of a man: But which waies she went, I could not for my life deuise, for after she gat once forth of the place where she shifted her, I could neuer more set eye of her.

Is Emelia gone (quoth her louer Phylotus, Oh GOD what euill newes bee these that I heare, and without any further staye, both the Father and the Louer, gatte them out at the doores together, and about the streates they runne like a couple of madde men.

Now it fell out, that Phylerno the Sonne of Alberto, and Brother to Emelia, whom you haue heard before, was left at Naples being an infant, and had remained there till this time at Schoole, and at this very instant was come from Naples to Rome, to visite his Father and Mother, of whom hee had no manner of knowledge, otherwise then by their names. And it fortuned that Alberto and Phylotus, happned to meet with Philerno in the Streates, who was so like his sister Emelia, that both Alberto & Phylotus assured themselues, that it could bee no other but she. Wherefore Alberto comming to him, said: Stay, stay most shameleese and ungracious Girle, doest thou thinke that by thy disguising of thy selfe, in this manner, thou canst escape vnknowne to me, who am thy Father, ah vile strumpet that thou art: what punishement is sufficient for the filthinesse of thy fact? And with this he seemed as though he would haue flien vpon her in the Streate to haue beate her: But Phylotus thrust in betweene them, and desired his neighbour to stay his selfe, and then imbracing Philerno in his armes, he saide: Ah Emelia my sweete and louing wench, howe canst thou so vnkindely forsake thy Philotus, whose tender loue towards thee is such, that as I will not let to make thee soueraigne of my selfe, so thou shalt be dame and Mistres of al that euer I haue, assuring thee, that thou shalt neuer want for golde, Gemmes, Jewelles, such as be fit and conuenient for thy degree.

Philerno seeing a couple of old doating fooles, thus clustering about him, not knowing what they were: had thought at the first they had bene out of their wits, but in the ende by their wordes, perceiuing a farther circumstance in the matter, hee deuised something for his owne disport, to fede them a little with their owne folly, said. Pardon me I beseech you this my grieuous offence, wherein I know I haue too far straied from the limitts and boundes of modestie, protesting hereafter so to gouerne my selfe, that there shal be no sufficient cause, whereby to accuse me of such vnmaidenlike parts, and will euer remaine with such duty and obedience, as I trust shall not deserue but to be liked during life.

Phylotus hauing heard this pitifull reconciliation, made by his Emelia, very gently entreated her Father in her behalfe, wel (quoth her father) seeing you will néedes haue me to forgiue this her leudnesse, at your request I am contented to pardon her, and then speaking to Philerno, he said,

How say you huswife, is your stomack yet come down, are you contented to take Phylotus for your husband, yea my good Father (quoth Philerno) and that with all my heart, O happy newes (quoth Phylotus) and herewithall he began to sette his cap on the one side, and to turne vp his muschatoes, and fell to wiping of his mouth, as though he would haue kept a killing of her by and by in the streets, but remembring himselfe where he was, he brought Alberto with Philerno, into a friends house, that was of his familiar acquaintance, and there the marriage betweene them was throughly concluded, and al parties seeming to giue their full consents. Phylotus desired his father in lawe, that he might haue the custodie of Emelia, swearing by his old honestie, that he would not vse her otherwise then his owne daughter Brisilia, vntill the day of his nuptialls, and then to vse her as his wife, to which request Alberto seemed very willingly to giue consent: But then because Philotus would not carry his beloued through the streetes in her mans apparell, he desired his father in lawe to goe home, and send some sute of her apparell, wherewith to shift her, before he would carry her to his owne house. Alberto seeing matters so throughly concluded, tooke his leaue of them both, and going his waies home, he caused all his daughters apparell to be looked together, and to be sent to the place where Philotus was remaining with Philerno, who taking forth such as should serue the tourne for that present. Philerno

so

so wel as he could arraied himselfe in one of his fathers suites of apparel, and thus departed with Philotus to his owne house, where Philotus calling his daughter Brisilla, he said vnto her, behold here the party, whom I haue chosen to be your mother, charging you of my blessing, that you honour, reuerence, and obey her, and with all diligence that you bee attendaunt vpon her, and ready at an inche to prouide her of any thing, that she shall either want or call for. And you my deare and louing Emelia, I doe here ordaine and appoint you to be mistres of this house, and of all that is in it, desiring you to accept of this my daughter, to doe you seruice in the day time, and in the night to vouchsafe her for your bedfellowe, vntill our day of marriage be prefixed, and then my selfe will supplie the roome. Philerno seeing the excellent beauty of Brisilla, was nothing sorrie to haue such a bedfellowe, but thought euery howre, a daie, till night was come, which being approched, to bedde they went, where Philerno did not thinke it his readiest way to giue any sodaine attempt, but therefore he brake into this discourse following.

Sweet Brisilla, were it not but that we be found partiall in the causes of our friends, but especially where the causes do touch our parents, our iudgements be so blinded by affection, that wee can neither see, nor will confesse a manifest troth but if matters might bee considered on, without respect of persons with indifference, and according to the truth and equitie of the cause: I durst then put my selfe in your arbitrement, my Brisilla, and to abide your sentence, whereto I doubt not but you would confesse, the prejudice I sustaine, it is much intollerable, and almost impossible for a yong maide to endure, and the rather, if you would measure my condition, by your owne estate, who being as you see, a young maiden like your selfe, and should bee thus constrained by my friendes, to the marrying of your father, whom I doe confesse to be worthie of a better wife then my self, but cõsidering the inequalitie of our yeares, I can not for my life frame my selfe to loue him, and yet I am forced against my will to marrie him, and am appointed to be your mother, that am more meete to be your companion & play fellowe. But that affiance which I haue conceiued to your good nature, hath made me thus boldly to speak vnto you, desiring but to heare your opinió with indifferency, whether you think I haue good cause to complaine or nay: and then

perauenture

peraduenture I will say farther vnto you, in a matter that doth con-
cerne your owne behoofe.

Brisilla hearing this pitifull complaint, verie sorrowfull in her be-
halfe, saied: would to God I were as well able to minister reliefe
vnto your distresse, according to your owne contentment, as I am
hartily sorie to consider your griefe, and so well perceiue the iust oc-
casion you haue to complaine.

Ah my Brisilla, saied Philerno, I am as hartily sorie in your be-
halfe, and peraduenture doe vnderstand some thing, which your self
doe not yet know of, which will greeue you verie sore. But tell Bri-
silla, let me aske you this question, doe you know my father, or nay.

No sure (quoth Brisilla) I haue no manner of knowledge of him,
neither dis I know, whether you had any father aliue or nay, but
now by your owne report, and as straung it was to me, to heare the
wordes which my Father vied to mee this day, when he brought
you home, for that I neuer vnderstood before, that hee went about a
wife.

Philerno was verie glad to heare these newes, because it serued
so much the better for his purpose, and therefore saied as followeth.

This tale that I minde to tell you (my Brisilla) will seeme more
straung then all the rest, and yet assure your self, it is nothing so
strange as true, and therefore giue eare to that I minde to say. Doe
you not thinke it verie straunge indeede, that the one of vs should be
made both mother and daughter to the other, and that our fathers
which be now so decrepite and olde should be so ouer haled, with the
furie of their fond and vnbridled affections, that to serue their owne
appetites, they force not with what clogges of care, they comber vs
that be their louing daughters, but haue concluded betweene them-
selues a crosse Marriage, and so in deede it may well bee termed,
that will fall out so ouerthwarte to our behooftes, who beyng now in
our yong and tender yeares, and should both of vs be made the dear-
linges of two olde men, that seekes to preferre their owne lust, before
their childrens loue, and measure the fierie flames of youth, by the
dead coales of age, as though they were able with their cold and rare
embracements, to delay the forces of the flesh, whose flames doeth
exceede in these our greene and tender yeares, and as much possible
for vs to continue in liking, as flowers are seene to agree with Frost,
but in plaine termes (my Brisilla) and to discipher a verie troth, it is
contracted betweene our aged parentes, that your father (as you see)

should

should first take me to his wife, which wedding being once performed, then my father in like manner should chalenge you, according as it is concluded betweene them.

Alas quoth Brisilla, these newes be straung indeede, and it should seeme by your wordes so fullie resolued on, that there is no hope of redresse to be had in the matter.

None in the world (quoth Philerno) but thus betweene our selues, the one of vs to comfort the other.

A cold comfort (quoth Brisilla) wee shall find in that but oh pitilesse parentes, that will preferre your owne pleasures with your childrens paine, your owne liking, with your childrens loathing, your owne gaine, with your childrens greefe, your owne sport, with your childrens spoile, your own delight, with your childrens despight. O how much more happy had it bin that we had neuer bin borne.

Alas my Brisilla (quoth Philerno) torment not your self with such extreame anguish, for if that would haue serued for redresse, the matter had bin remedied, and that long sithence: But I would to GOD my Brisilla, that I were a man for your onely sake, and hauing so good leasure, as thus being together by our selues, we would so handle the matter, that our fathers should seeke new wiues.

Alas (quoth Brisilla) such wishes are but waste, and vnpossible it is that any such thing should happen.

Impossible (quoth Philerno) nay surely Brisilla, there is nothing impossible, but I haue knowne as great matters as these haue been wrought: Doe we not read that the Goddesse Venus, transformed an Ivorie Image to a liuely and perfect woman, at the onely request of Pygmalion, Diana likewise conuerted Acteon to a Hart, Narcissus for his pride was turned to a flower, Archane to a Spider, with a great number of others haue bin transformed, some into beastes, some into foules, and some into fishes, but amongst the rest of the miracles that haue bin wrought by the Goddesse, this storie falleth out most meet and fitting to our purpose.

There was sometime remaining in the Countrey of Phestos a maried couple, the husband called by the name of Lictus, the wife Telethusa, who being with childe, was willed by her husbande so soone as she should be deliuered, if it were not a lad, that the child should presently be slaine, his wife beyng deliuered at her appointed time, brought forth a girle, and yet notwithstanding her husbandes commandement, brought vp the child, making her husband beleeue

it was a boye and called it by the name of Iphis, and thus as it grew in yeares, was apparelled like a lad, and being after by his father assured to a wife called by name of Ianthe, a young maiden, and the daughter of one Telestdwelling in Dictis, Telethusa the mother of Iphis, fearing her deceipt would be known, deferred of the marriage day so long as shée could, sometimes faining tokens of ill successe, sometimes faining sickenesse, sometimes one thing, sometimes an other, but when all her shiftes were driven to an ende and the marriage day at hand, Telethusa comming to the Temple of the Goddesse Isis, with her heaire scattered about her eares, where before the Aulter of Isis, shée made her humble supplications, and the gentle Goddesse having compassion, transformed Iphis to a man.

Loe here Brisilla, as great a matter brought to pas as any we haue spoken of yet, and the Goddesse bee of as great force and might in these daies, as euer they were in times past, wée want but the same zeale and faith to demaund it, and sure in my opinion, if either of vs made our request to the Goddesse, who commonly be still assistant to helpe distressed wightes, they would neuer refuse to graunt our reasonable requestes, and I will aduenture on it my selfe, and that without any farther circumstaunce.

And here with all he séemed with many piteous sighes, throwing vp his hands to the heauens, to mumble forth many words in secret, as though he had béene in some great contemplation, and sodainely without any manner of stirring either of hand or foote, did lie still as it had bin a thing immouable, whereat Brisilla beganne for to muse, and in the ende spake to him, but Phylerno made no manner of answeare, but séemed as though he had bén in some traunce, wherewith Brisilla beganne to call and with her arme to shake him, and Phylerno giuing a piteous sigh, as though he had bén awaked sodainly out of some dreame, saied. O blessed Goddesse Venus, I yéld thée humble thankes, that hast not despised to graunt my request: and then speaking to Brisilla, hee saied: and now my Brisilla be of good comfort, for the same Goddesse which haue not disdained to heare my supplication, will likewise bée assistaunt to further our farther pretences, as hereafter at our better leasure we shall consider of, in the meane time receiue thy louing friend, that to day was appointed to be thy fathers wife, but now consecrated by the Goddesse to bée thy louing husband, and here withall imbracing

Brisilla

Brisilla in his armes. She perceiued in deede that Emelia was perfectly metamorphosed, which contented her very well, thinking her selfe a thrise happie woman to light of such a bedfellowe, thus both of them the one pleased very well with the other, they passed the time, till Phylotus had prepared and made all thinges readie for his Marriage day, and then calling his friends and neighbours about him, to the Church they goe together, where Alberto gaue Phylerno his sonne, in the steede of his daughter Emelia to Phylotus for his wife: when all the rest of the Marriage rites that are to bee done in the Church were performed, they passed forth the day with feasting and great mirth vntill it was night. When the companie beganne to breake vp, and euery one to take his leaue, and Phylotus with his bride were brought into their Chamber, where Phylerno desiring the companie to auoide, and making fast the doore, he saied to Phylotus, there resteth yet a matter to be decided betweene you and mée, and séeing wée be here together by our selues, and that time and place doeth fall out so fitt, I hold it for the best, that it be presently determined.

What is the matter then (quoth Phylotus) speake boldly my Emelia, and if there be any thing that hanges in difference betweene vs, I trust it shall easily be brought to a good agreement.

I praie God it may (quoth Phylerno) and to reueale the matter in breefe and short circumstaunce, it is this. You are nowe my husband, and I your lawful wife, and for that I doe know the difference in our yeares, your selfe being so olde and I very yong, it must néeds fall out there will be as great diuersitie in our conditions, for age is commonly giuen to be froward, testy, and ouerthwart: youth againe to be frolique, pleasant, and merrie, and so likewise in all our other conditions wée shall bée found so contrarie and disagréeing, that it will bée impossible for vs to like the one of the others doinges, for when I shall séeme to follow my owne humour, then it will fall out to your discontentment. And you againe to follow that diet which your age doeth constraine, will be most loathsome vnto me, then you béeing my husband will thinke to commaund me, and I must bée obedient to your will, but I being your wife, will thinke seame to bee controlde, and will dispose of my selfe according to my owne liking, and then what braules and brabbles will fall out, it were to much to bee rehearsed, and thus wee shall liue neither of vs both in quiet, nor neither of vs both contented, and therefore for

the auoiding of these inconueniences, I haue deuised this way, that being thus together by our selues, wee will trie by the eares which of vs shall be maister and haue authoritie to commaund, if the victorie happen on your side, I am contented for euer after to frame my selfe to your ordinaunce and will, as it shall please you to appoint: if otherwise the conquest happen on my side, I wil triumph like a victor, and will looke to beare such a sway that I will not be contraried in any thing, whatsoeuer it shall please me to commaund.

Phylotus knowing not what to make of these speeches, and thinking the time verie long, till he had taken his first fruites, saied: Come, come my Emelia, let vs goe to bed, where I doubt not but wee shall so well agree, that these matters will easely bee taken vp, without any controuersie, such as you haue spoken of.

Neuer while I liue (quoth Phylerno) before I know whereon to resolue: whether you shal rest at my commandement, or I at yours.

Why (quoth Phylotus) doe you speake in earnest or would you looke to commaund me that am your husband, to whom you ought to vse all duetie and obedience.

Then were I in good case (quoth Phylerno) that should be tied to vse duetie or obedience, to a man of your peares, that would not let to prescribe vs rules of your owne dotage, to be obserued in steede of domesticall discipline.

Then I perceiue (quoth Phylotus) we shall haue something adoe with you hereafter, that will vse me with these tearmes the very first night. But see you make no more to doe, but come on your waies to bed.

And I perceiue (quoth Phylerno) the longer that I beare with you, the more foole I shall finde you, and with this vp with his fiste and gaue Phylotus a sure wherite on the eare, Phylotus in a great rage flies againe to Phylerno: there was betweene them sowse for sowse, and bore for bore, that it was hard to Iudge who should haue the victorie. In the end Phylerno getteth Phylotus fast by the graie beard, and by plaine force pulles him downe on the floore, and so he pomels him about the face, that he was like to haue bin strangled with his owne blood, which gushed out of his nose & mouth. Wherfore houlding vp his handes he cried, Oh Emelia, I yelde my selfe banquished and ouercome, for Gods sake hold thy handes, and I wil neuer more contend with thee during life.

Phylerno staying himselfe saied, art thou contented then to yelde,

me

me the conquest, and hereafter this according as thou hast saied: neuer more to striue with me, neuer to gainsay any thing, whatsoeuer it shall please me to command.

Neuer while I liue (quoth Phylotus) and therefore for Gods sake let me arise and chalenge to your selfe what superioritie you please, which for me shall neuer be denied so long as I shall liue.

Well (quoth Phylerno) but before I will let you arise, I will haue you promise mée to confirme these conditions, which follow in this maner. First, that at my pleasure I may go abroad with my friends, to make merry so often as I liste, whither I list, and with whom I list. And neither at my going forth, to be demaunded whither I wil, ne at my returne to be asked where I haue bin. I will farther haue you condescend to this, that for as much as I haue learned, that it is not onely very vntoothsome, but likewise very vnwholesome, for youth and age, to lie soking together in one bedde. I will therefore make no bedfellowe of you, but at my owne pleasure. And in manner as followeth, that is to say: this first yeare I shall be contented, to bestow one night in a moneth to doe you pleasure, if I may sée you worthy of it, or that you be able to deserue it: but the first yeare being once expired, fower times a yeare may very well suffice, that is one night a quarter, as it shall please my selfe to appoint. There be many other matters which I will not now stand to repeate, but these before rehearsed, be the principall thinges wherein I will not be controlo, but meane to follow mine owne liking, how say you Phylotus, can you bée contented to frame your selfe herein, to followe my directions.

Alas (quoth Phylotus) I see no other shifte, I must perforce endeauour my selfe patiently to abide what soeuer it shal please you to cõmand and doe pelo my selfe as recreant, and ouercome, and wholy doe put my selfe to your fauour and mercie, readie to receiue whatsoeuer it shal please you to awarde vnto me.

Phylerno, letting him now arise saied, prepare your selfe then to goe to your bedde, and anon at mine owne leasure, I will come vnto you: and departe againe at mine owne pleasure, when I shall sée time.

Phylotus, comforting him selfe with these swéete spéeches did thinke it pet, to be some parte of amendes, that shee had promised to come and visit him: went quietly to his bedde, there to abide the good howre till Emelia did come.

Philerno, hauing prepared one of these mercenarie women (whereof there are great store in Rome to be had) conueighed her to the bed of Phylotus, giuing her instructions how to vse her selfe: and went himselfe to his best beloued Brisilla, whom he had made priuie to his whole deuise, and in this manner it was agreed betweene them, they had thought to haue dieted Phylotus once a moneth with some cast stuffe, such as they could hire best cheape in the Towne.

But it fell out that Flanius, whom you haue heard before, had stolne away Emelia, beeing at the Church the same day that Phylotus was married, and saw Alberto giue his daughter Emelia to Phylotus for his wife: had thought assuredly that himselfe had bin deceiued by some Deuill or spirit, that had taken vpon him the likenesse of Emelia. And therefore hasting himselfe home with all possible speede, came to Emelia, and blessing himselfe he said: I charge thée in the name of the liuing GOD, that thou tell me what thou art, and that thou presently depart to the place from whence thou camest. And I coniure thée in the name of the holie Trinitie, by our blessed Lady the Virgine Mary, by Angels and Archangels, Patriarkes and Prophetes, by the Apostles, and fower Euangelistes, Mathewe, Marke, Luke and Iohn, by all the holie Martyres and Confessours, and the rest of the rabble and blessed route of Heauen, that thou quietly depart without any maner of preiudice, either to man, woman, or childe, either to any manner of beast that is vppon the face of the earth, the foules of the ayre, or the fishes in the Sea, & without any maner of tempest, storme, whirle wind, thunder or lightning, and that thou take no maner of shape, that may séeme either terrible or fearefull vnto me.

Emelia hearing these words, marualling much what they meant: with a smiling countenaunce came towardes Flanius saying, why how now Seignior Flanius, what doe you thinke me to be some Deuill, or any Hagge of hell, that you fall to coniuring, and blessing of your selfe.

I charge thée come no nére (quoth Flanius) stand backe, for these inticementes can no longer abuse me, when I haue séene with mine eyes, my beloued Emelia, married in the Church, and giuen by Alberto her Father, to Phylotus for his wife, what should I thinke of thée but to bée some fiend, or sent vnto mée by some Inchauntment or Witchcraft, and therefore I will no longer neither of thy

companie, neither of thy conference: And here withall taking Emelia, by the shoulders, he thrust her forth of doores, and shutting the doore after her: He gat him to his chamber (where he fell to his prayers, thinking assuredly that Emelia, had béene some spirit.

But Emelia, after shee had a three or fower daies made what meanes she could to Flanius, and sawe it was in vaine: was driuen to goe to her father, before whom falling vpon her knees, she desired him most humbly to forgiue her.

Alberto taking her vp in his armes saide, that hée knewe nothing wherein she had offended him, but her suite might easily bée graunted.

Deare father (quoth Emelia) I know I haue offended, and so far as my fact deserueth, rather to be punished then pitied: the remembrance whereof is so loathsome vnto me, that I feare to call you by the name of Father, hauing shewed my selfe so vnworthy a daughter. These wordes she pronounced with such sorrowe, that the teares streamed downe her cheékes, wherewith Alberto moued with naturall affection, said, deare childe, I know no such offence that ought to be so grieuously taken: but speake boldly what so euer it be, I freelie forgiue it.

Emelia very well comforted with these spéeches, began to discourse how she first disguised her selfe in Pages apparell, and what griefe it was to her conscience, that she should so far stray from the duety and obedience of a childe, and to become a fugitiue in a mans apparell. But her father not suffering her further to proceéde in her tale, said: Alas deare daughter if this bee the matter, it is long agoe sith I haue both forgiuen and forgotten these causes: and therefore let these things neuer trouble you. But tell mee now howe doe you like of your bedfellow, how agrée you with him, or he with you, I would be glad to knowe.

Alas deare father (quoth Emelia) that is the matter that I come to you, he hath turned me away, and will no longer take me for his wife, and what is the cause that hath mooued him vnto it, I protest before God I know not for my life.

Hath he turned thée away (quoth Alberto) my selfe will quickly finde a remedy for that matter, and without any more to do (would not tarry so much as while his gowne was a brushing) but out of doores hée goes towards Phylotus, whom by chance he met withall in the stréetes, & in a great chafe begins to chalenge him for abusing

of his daughter, swearing that he would make all Rome to speake of his abuse, if he meant to proceed in that he had begun.

Phylotus wondering to see the man in such an agonie, beganne to wish that he had neuer seene him nor his daughter neither, and that if any body haue cause to complaine, it is I, quoth Philotus) that haue married such a wife, that is more like to a Deuill then a woman: and I perceiue now is maintained in her mischiefe by you that are her father, who ought rather to rebuke her then so to take her part, and to incourage her in her lewdnesse.

What incouragement is this you speake off quoth Alberto) I knowe not what you meane by these words, but assure your selfe of this, that as I will not maintaine my child in any thing that is euill, so I will not see her take manifest wrong.

Doe you thinke this to be good then (quoth Philotus) that your daughter should bestowe such handsale on her husband as she hath already bestowed vpon me? and then pointing to his face, he said: See here your daughters handy worke, how thinke you, is this requisite to be borne withall, that you stand so much in your daughters defence.

Alberto seeing his face all swolne, and the shinne scratched off, perceiued that Phylotus was at a fray, and had good cause to complaine: And wondering that his daughter was so sodainely become a shrewe, said: If this be my daughters handy worke, I can neither beare withall, neither will I allowe it in her, to vse her husband. And therefore I pray you, let me heare the matter debated betweene you: and I doubt not but to take such order, as there shall no more any such rule happen betweene you.

I am contented you shall debate what you will (quoth Philotus) so it may be done with quietnesse, but I will neuer more contende with her for the Maisterie while I liue, she hath already wonne it, I am contented she shall weare it.

I pray you then (quoth Alberto) that you will goe home to your owne house, and I will goe fetch my daughter and will come vnto you straight way, and I doubt not but to take such order betweene you, as shall fall out to both your likings.

I pray God you may (quoth Phylotus) and I will goe home and there will stay your comming.

Alberto likewise went to his owne house, and calling Emelia, said neuer a word vnto her, but willed her to followe him: and comming

ming to the house of Philotus, whom hee found within, tarying his comming. And by fortune at the same instant, Psilerno and Brisilla both were gone into the towne to buie certaine thinges that they had néede of. And Alberto beginning first to rebuke his daughter, that would séeme in such manner to abuse her husband, and with a long discourse he preached vnto her, with what duetie and obedience, women ought to vse their husbands withal, and not to take vpon them like maisters, to correct and chastice them. Emelia denied not onely the fact, but also she denied Philotus to be her husband.

What haue we here to doe (quoth her father) how ca nst thou (shamelesse queane) denay that, which within these fower daies was performed, in the face of the whole worlde?

Emelia standing stiffe to her tacheling, would in no wise confesse that euer she was married.

Then her father began to charge her with her own woords, which he had vsed to him before, howe she had disguised herselfe in mans apparell, and so stole away forth of doores the which Emelia neuer denied. Why then (quoth her Father) did not I méete thée in the streates, and at the request of thy husband here present, did forgiue thée thy fault, to whom I then deliuered thée, and with whom thou hast euer sithence remained.

Emelia made flatte deniall of any of all these saiynges to be true. Alberto in a great furie, would haue taken witnesse of Philotus in the matter, but Philotus fearing an other banquet at night, when he should goe to bed, durst not in any wise séeme to contrary Emelia: In the end after great sending and proying had in the matter, Emelia from point to point discoursed to her Father, how she first fell into the liking of Flamius, and by his practise so conueighed her selfe away in his Pages apparell, and had with him remained all this while, til now he had turned her way.

Her father would in no wise allowe this tale to be true, but Flamius being well knowne to be a courteous Gentleman, Alberto deuised to send for him, who presently at his gentle intreatie, cam to the house of Philotus, where he spared not to confesse a truth, that onely for the loue that he bare to Emelia, he deuised to steale her away, and there came one vnto him in the likenesse of Emelia, in the same apparell that he had prouided for her, whom he verie charely kept vntill such time as hee sawe with his owne eyes, that Emelia was married in the Church to Philotus, and then assuring him

selfe, that he had bin deceiued by some Spirit, that had taken vpon him the similitude and likenesse of Emelia, he presentlie came home, and tourned her away, and what was become of her, he could neuer learne.

Alberto much amazed to heare this tale, saied. Senior Flanius doe you knowe your Emelia againe, if you see her, and then poinctiug to his daughter, he saied: Is not this the same Emelia that you speake of, which you haue tourned away?

I know not (quoth Flanius) the one from the other, but sure I sawe with mine eyes two Emelias so like, that the one of them of force must needes be the Deuill.

There is no question (quoth Phylotus) but that is my wife, if there be neuer a Deuill of them both, I know it is she: Out alas that euer I was borne, what shal I now doe, I know I haue Married a deuil.

And by fortune as Alberto chaunced to looke forth of the window, he espied Phylerno & Brisilla in the Streate comming homewordes: peace (quoth Alberto) here commeth the other Emelia, we shall now trie, which of them is the deuill (I thinke) before we departe.

By this Philerno was come in, and hearing howe matters had beene debated, and were faine out, againe knowing Alberto to bee his Father, & what preiudice his sister Emelia was like to sustaine, if she should be forsaken by her friend and louer Flanius, confessed the whole matter, humblie desiring his father to forgiue him.

When hee had a while wondered at the circumstaunce, and the truth of euery thing laied open, and come to light, all parties were well pleased and contented, sauing Philotus, for when he remembred first the losse of his loue Emelia, then how Philerno had beaten him, what a bedfellow he had prouided him, while he himselfe went and laie with his daughter: these thinges put all together, made him in such a chafe, that he was like to runne out of his wittes: But when he had raged a good while, and sawe how little helpe it did preuaile him, he was contented in the end, that his daughter Brisilla, should Marrie with Philerno, and Flanius verie ioyfully receiued againe his Emelia (when he knew she was no deuill) and both the marriages consummat in on day.

And so I pray GOD giue them ioye and euery old dotarde so good successe as had Philotus.

The Conclusion.

GEntle Reader, now thou hast perused these Histories to the end, I doubt not but thou wilt deeme of them, as they worthily deserue, and thinke such vanities more fitter to be presented on a Stage (as some of them haue bin) then to be published in Print (as til now they haue neuer bin) but to excuse my selfe of the folly that here might be imputed vnto me, that my selfe beeing the first that haue put them to the print, should likewise be the first that should condemne them as vaine: for mine owne excuse herein I answere, that in the writing of them, I haue vsed the same manner, that many of our yong Gentlemen vseth now a daies, in the wearing of their apparell, which is rather to follow a fashion that is new (be it neuer so foolish) then to be tyed to a more decent custome, that is cleane out of vse: Somtime wearing their haire freezeled so long, that makes them looke like a water Spaniell: sometimes so shorte like a newe shorne Sheepe, their beards sometimes cut round like a Philipps Doller, sometimes square like the Kings head in Fishstreete: sometimes so neare the skinne, that a man might iudge by his face, the Gentleman had had very pilde luck, their Cappes and Hattes sometimes so big, as will hold more wit, then three of them haue in their heads: Sometimes so little, that it will hold no wit at all. Their Ruffes sometimes so huge, as shall hang about their neckes like a Cart wheele: Sometimes a little falling band that makes them looke like one of the Queenes silke women. Their Cloakes sometimes so long, as it shall trippe on their heeles, sometimes so short, as will not hang ouer their elbowes: Their Jerkins sometimes with high collers, buttoned close vnder their chinne, sometimes with no collers at all about their neckes, like a wench in a red Mastcoate that were washing of a bucke: Sometimes with long sawcie sleeues, that wil be in euery dish before his maister, sometimes without sleeues, like Scogins man that vsed to run of sleeuelesse errandes: Their Dublets sometime faggot wasted aboue the nauill, sometimes Cowebeallied belowe the flankes, that the Gentleman must vndoe a button when he goes to pisse.

In their hose so many fashions as I cannot describe, sometimes Garragascoynes, breached like a Beare, sometimes close to the docke, like the Deuill in a Plea (wanting but a teale) sometimes round like to Sainct Thomas Onions, sometimes petite Ruffs of two inches long, with a close stocking cleane aboue the nocke of his teale: somtimes disguising themselues after the vse of Spaine, sometimes after the Italian manner, and many times they imitate the French fashion so neare, that all their hayre is ready to fal of their heads.

Now I am sure, if any of them were asked, why he vsed such variety in his apparell, he would answer, because he would followe the fashion. Let this then suffice likewise for mine excuse, that my selfe seeing trifles of no accompt, to be now best in season, and such vanities more desired then matters of better purpose, & the greatest part of our writers, still busied with the like. So I haue put forth this booke because I would followe the fashion.

The people (quoth she) were able to speake euil inough for working, at the last hearing out, into these termes, if (quoth she) I had found my choise of a husband worthy of my loue, I should neuer haue giuen him cause thus to mooner at me, nor my selfe haue bin occasion to complaine for such a trifle, for that I might haue done, as other women doe, and haue followed euery fashion, and euery new deuise, without either grudging, or restraint of my desire, I should not then haue bin inforced to such a kinde of silence, but I might haue made my husband priuie to my wantes, I should not then haue him kept like Ione of the Country, in a tire of the olde fashion twenty a month ago.

While Mistres Mildred was proceeding in these speeches or such other like, the Deuill her husband was stroke in such a humpe, that not able any longer to indure her talke, he not onely auoided himselfe from her presence, but also deuised with speede to flie the Country, and comming to Douer, thinking to crosse the Seas, finding shipping ready, he take his course and gat him to Rome, neuer staying till hee came to Constantinople, where the Turke kept his Court, and nowe forgetting all humanitie which he had learned before in England, he began againe a fresh to play the deuill, and so possessed the Turke himselfe, which such straunge and vnacquainted passions, that by the coniecture of Phisitions, and other learned men that were then assembled together, to iudge the Turkes diseases, they all concluded that it must needes bee some Fiend of hell, that so disturbed their Soueraigne, whereupon Proclamations were presently sent forth, that whosoeuer could giue reliefe, should haue a thousand crowunes by the yeere, so long as he did liue. The desire of these crowunes, caused many to attempt the matter, but the furie of the deuill was such, that no man could preuaile.

Nowe it fortuned that Perseus, the Father of Mistres Mildred, at this present to bee at Constantinople, who by constraint of some extreamitie, was now compelled to practise Phisicke, wherein he had some practie sighte, but there withall so good successe, that who but Perseus the English Phisition, had all the name though the whole Turkish Empire. The fame of this Phisition came to the hearing of the Turke, who sending for Perseus, began to debate with him of the straungnesse of his fites, proffering large summes of money if he could finde a remedie. To whom Perseus answered, that it passed farre his skill: the Turke notwithstanding, would not giue ouer, but intreated Perseus to take in hand the cure, which when he still denied, and thinke it rather proceeded of stubbornesse, then for want of experience, wherefore he began to threaten him, swearing that if he would not accomplish his request, it should cost him his life.

Perseus seeing him selfe so hardly beseeue, was contented to trie some parte of his cunning: and the next day when the Turke was in his fite, he was brought in, to shew the maner howe it behoue him. Whom the deuill perceiuing to come in at the doore, speaking to Perseus, he said in this manner.

My Father Perseus, I am glad I see you here, but what winde hath driuen you hether to this place.

Why what art thou (quoth Perseus) that calleth me thy Father.

Marie (quoth the Deuill) I am Balthaser, that was once married to your daughter, and am a deuill of hel, though you neuer knew it before, who your daughter wearied

wearied so much with her new fashions, as I had rather be in hell, then married to such a wife.

And are thou then Balthaser (quoth Perseus) why then I pray thee good son depart our Grandseignisour the Turke, for he hath threatned me for thy cause, to take away my life.

Marry (quoth Balthaser) even so I would have it, it were some part of acquittance, for your daughters kindnesse towards me,

Perseus seeing the disposition of the Deuill, thought it not good to deale any farther with him at that present, but afterward when the Turke was come to himselfe, he requested of him but respite for one moneth, and against the day that he should then take him in hand againe, he devised with the Turke, that all the Ordnaunce in the Towne might be shot off, all the Belles in the Towne might be rong, and that all the Trumpets, Drummes, and all manner of other instruments might altogether sound, about the court and lodging of the Turke.

These things being accordingly prepared, and the day come that was allotted, Perseus being with the Turke at the beginning of his fit, according as it was appointed, the Ordnaunce was shot off, the Belles began to ring, Musitions played on every side, at which sodaine noise, the Deuill beganne to wonder, and calling to Perseus he said: why how now father, what meaneth all this noise? Why (quoth Perseus) doest thou not know the meaning, then I perceiue Deuils do not know all: but because thou must be acquainted with it, I will tell thee before hand. The last time I talked with thee thou toldest me thou hadst married my daughter, and thy tokens were so true, that I am sure thou dost not lie, for which cause knowing where thy biding is, I have sent for her to the Towne, and this noise that thou hearest, is her welcome to the Court.

And is my wife then come hether to seeke me out? (quoth the Deuill) then I shall be sure to be troubled with new fashions: nay then farewell Constantinople, for I had rather goe to hell: and thus leaving the Turke he departed his way.

Now to conclude, if a silly woman were able to weary the Deuill, that trobled him with new fashions but once in a moneth, I thinke God himselfe will be wearied with the outrages of men, that are pusted with new fangles at the least once in a day: I can no more, but wish that Gentlemen leaning such superficiall follies, would rather indeavour themselues in other exercises that might be much more beneficiall to their country, and a great deale better to their owne reputation, and thus an ende.

FINIS.